

A NEW
SPANISH
GRAMMAR,

More perfect than any hitherto publish'd.

All the ERRORS of the former being
Corrected, and the RULES for Learning
that Language much improv'd.

To which is added, A
VOCABULARY

Of the most necessary WORDS:

Also a COLLECTION of
PHRASES and DIALOGUES

Adapted to
FAMILIAR DISCOURSE.

By Capt. JOHN STEVENS, Author
of the large SPANISH DICTIONARY.

The SECOND EDITION.
The whole Improved, Corrected, and Amended,
By SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.

LONDON:
Printed for T. MEIGHAN in Drury-Lane,
T. Cox at the Lamb under the Royal-Ex-
change, and J. Wood in Pater-noster-row.

M DCC XXXIX.





A L

Muí ilustre y noble Señór

Don GUILLEM O STANHOPE,

Señór Barón de HARRINGTON,

Embaxadór que fue en la Corte de Espáña, Plenipotenciário en los Congressos de Sevilla, y Soissons; y al presente úno de los Principáles Secretarios de Estado de su Magestad Británica, del Conféjo de su Mag^d. &c.

Exc^{mo}. Señór.

NO dexára en mi de fer animosidád temeraria, el ponér éste libro à los piés de V. Ex. si su buén índole y afabilidád no le quitáffen el ser Offiadía.

El Nombre de Stanhope es tan conocido en Espáña, de tantos áños à ésta párté; y su müi ilustre y noble Prospria, tan altamente respetada y aplaudida, que nunca cederá al olvido su Memoria: yâ

D E D I C A T I O N.

por las Múchas y continuadas Embaxádas conque han ilustrádo aquella Corte ; yá por las heróicas hazáñas, que, en tiempo de Guerra, han merecido los aplausos de la Európa tóda ; ó yá por la tranquilidád, que han sugerido en vários Congréssos para el bién público. En tiempo de Páz, les ha venerado la Espáña como Nativos de aquél País, y en tiempo de Guerra les há considerado tan Galánes como Valerósos. En recíproca benevoléncia, siempre aquélla familia há mostrado tál inclinación y Cariño à los de aquella nación, que, paréce, le asiste una propensión innata à beneficiarles y protegerles.

'Esto es, loque esfuerza mi humildad à ofrecer à su Ex. éste tenuissimo obsequio ; pues V. E. há heredado, como que en compléxo, lo heróico y especiales prerrogativas de la familia tóda : há seguido los pássos, continuado los progrésos, y adelantado la gloria de sus Antecessores. Hái muchos, que confágran sus libros à Príncipes y Proceres, ajenos del conocimiento de que tratan, dando por motivo la necessidad de su protección contra los Malévolos (como si con el libro no se comprásse la libertad de murmurár del) : Mas cuerdos y menos Lisonjeros eran los Antiguos, que dedicaban los suyos, ó à sus Amigos, ó algún Príncipe inteligente, à quién, por razón del argumento, se le debía la obra. Y revocando yo al uso moderno la práctica de los Antiguos, Nádie podrá negár mi acierto en la elección de V. E. pues clíjo à Persona tan benemérita, que puéde juzgar y aprobar : luégo en vánio solicitará yo à V. E. pára la acceptacion, quando de justicia se le débe esta dedicatoria. Sé bién, que el tributarle elogios, será ofendér su Modéstia : Porloque suplico, solo, elque V. E. se digne de recebir y patrocinár ésta obrilla, como à demostración de mi Afecto y Veneración. En cāso, que V. E. hallare algo de su agrado

D E D I C A T I O N.

grado y mereciere su aprobación, me quedará el consuelo de decirle, loque Horácio à su Mecénas :

Magnus hoc ego duco, quod placui tibi.

Y la obligación de rogár à Diós, le G^{de}. y prospére por dilatados áños : Asssegurándole, que en tanto me tendrá por feliz, en quanto publicaré que fói, con el debido rendimiento, de

V. Exc^a.

El mas humilde y Obediente servidór

Q. B. S. M.

SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.



T H E
P R E F A C E.

UPON a careful Examination of this Grammar, (altho' the best that is extant,) I found the Rules laid down so very deficient and incorrect, that I thought I could not do the Publick a greater Service, than by presenting them with one more perfect. This induced me to undertake the Correction of it; to lay down a new, modern, and approved Orthography and Etymology; and to add so many necessary Rules to it, that the Reader, who is acquainted with the former Edition, will hardly know that this is STEVENS'S GRAMMAR. I do not intend to undervalue what others have done of this Nature: What I can say without Presumption is, that I have consulted all former Grammars, and inserted in this what I have found well grounded: I have rectified Abundance of Mistakes, which other Authors have passed over, and corrected others laid down by them as established Rules; and I leave the Learned to Judge of the many Improvements made in this Edition.

The

The P R E F A C E.

The Rules for the true Pronuntiation are as clearly expressed as can be done in Writing. The Articles and Parts of Speech are explained in a Manner easy and intelligible to young Beginners. The Conjugation of Verbs (one of the most intricate Parts of the Castilian Language) is laid down in the most plain Manner, to each of which is added that of the Passive, Reciprocal, Impersonal, and other irregular Verbs. I have also inserted two Tables, by which the Learned will, at first view, see the Difference between the three Conjugations.

The Curious will herein find all that is requisite and necessary, to lead them into the perfect Knowledge of the Castilian (commonly called the Spanish Tongue) which has been preserved in those Provinces, in a greater Purity and Perfection, than in any other of the more distant ones from the Court : This was the Reason that induced King Don Alonzo the Wise to order that all publick Writings, &c. should be made in the Castilian Tongue. I have laid down some fixt Rules in the Rudiments, to avoid ambiguity in the Pronuntiation of the Letters B, V, &c. erroneously used before, even among the Spaniards. The Vocabulary, Familiar Phrases, and the Colloquies are carefully amended ; and all the Words are accented to avoid Mistakes in the Pronunciation.

It was high Time (nay there was an absolute necessity) to make a new Edition of the Spanish Grammar : For all Languages alter by Time and Custom ; and the Castilian has received so many Alterations, that no-body can pretend to teach it, or learn it in Perfection, as it is spoken at Court, and used by modern Authors, without some new Instructions. The ç, (called

The P R E F A C E.

(called cedilla) which was so much in use before, is now left off, and the Reasons for it the Reader will find in my Observations on that Letter, and the z is substituted in its Place. The y, which commonly passed as a Vowel, is now a Consonant in Composition. Some of the Spanish Words are softened, and others altered, as more conformable to the Latin; as instead of Coraçon we say Corazón: for vezes, dezír, hazér; véces, decir, hacér: instead of estoy, doy, Reyno; estói, dói, Réino: for dava, iva, devo, escrivo; dába, íba, débo, escriþo: for Cavállo, Govierno; Cabállo, Gobiérno: for abuelo or aguelo; avuélo: hái for ay or hay: Ahí for aí or haí, &c. I have followed, in the Correction of this Grammar, the Dictionary lately published by the Royal Academy of Madrid, which is the only Standard for all those who aim at Speaking and Writing correctly and elegantly the Spanish Language.



A N E W,



THE
RUDIMENTS
OF THE
Spanish Grammar.

A S there are many who study the CASTILIAN language, without understanding before-hand what Grammar is, and that every body may have certain rules for his guide, I think it may not be useless to make an epitome of it and its parts.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing properly. And is divided into four parts, *viz.*

ORTHOGRAPHY, or the method of true writing.

ETYMOLOGY, or the knowledge of the original words.

SYNTAX, or the manner of forming the words into sentences.

PROSODY, or the knowledge of the accent or quantity of the syllables, as to their being pronounced long or short.

B

PART

P A R T I.

Of ORTHOGRAPHY,

Which contains some very curious and necessary observations to learn the Castilian tongue in perfection.

C H A P. I.

Of the Letters in general.

THE Spanish language has not a peculiar alphabet of it's own, tho' it is not disputable, but that before the conquest of *Spain* by the *Romans*, the *Spaniards* had characters or letters to express their language in, and that the *Goths* also introduced theirs. But there is no memorial of the former, and the *Gothic* ceased in the year 1091 by decree of the national council at *Leon*, in the reign of Don *Alonso VI.* in which it was appointed that no characters should be used besides that of the *Roman*: Ever since which time they have continued the *Latin* letters ; with the addition of a few borrowed from the *Greek*, in order to own their debt for such words as they took from that language, and these are *cb*, *k*, *pb*, *tb*, *y*, correspondent to *χ*, *κ*, *φ*, *ς*, and *υ*.

The *Castilian* alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, including the *b* : the twenty-three following are common to other languages.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,
R, S, T, U, X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,
t, u, x, y, z.

And

And the other three letters *ç*, *j*, *ñ*, for their different pronunciation are peculiar to the *Castilian* language.

Of the common, these five are vowels *A*, *E*, *I*, *O*, *U*, to which the *Y* is added for the Greek words, so called from their expressing a sound without the help of any other letter. The rest are consonants, so called from their having no sound alone, and are regularly divided into *mutes* and *semi-vowels*; or, as others say, into *natural* and *confus'd*: the *mutes* or *natural* are *B*, *C*, *D*, *G*, *K*, *P*, *Q*, *T*, *Z*, and the *semi-vowels* or *confused* are *F*, *H*, *L*, *M*, *N*, *R*, *S*, *X*, so called for their being pronounced with a vowel before and after it.

Of which *L*, *M*, *N*, *R*, *S*, are liquids: *ç*, *j*, *ñ*, *v*, and *y*, are likewise consonants in the *Spaniſh* language.

Of the pronunciation of the letters.

A Letter is nothing more (in the sense we speak here) than *a note of a peculiar sound, and an individual part of a syllable.*

Letters are (as some authors affirm) in comparison to the languages what notes are to Musick. If from the notes may be formed various and innumerable tones, whose sweet and pleasant harmony cherish, and with sounding eloquence persuades; so are the concerts of words infinite, which result from the letters, whose composition with an eloquent melody describes to us the thoughts, and brings the invisible to life: both as written, speak to the eyes, and as pronounced, to the hearing. And if nobody without the perfect knowledge of notes can boast of being a Musician; less can any one presume to know with delicacy a language without a full knowledge of the letters.

4 *The RUDIMENT S* of

For which reason, and as in the order of nature, the simple is first, and then the compound, it appears proper to begin by the vowels, whose sound is so simple as to be formed only by opening the mouth.

Of the vowels.

A a

IS pronounced as in *English*, aw, as in the words *all, ball, call, ball*: without differing from the manner in which it is pronounced by other nations.

E e

Is pronounced the same as in the *Latin, Italian,* and *French* tongues, nay even the same as in the English in the words to *bless, to send*.

Tho' e be doubled it never loses its pronunciation, so that when there are two ee in a word, both are plainly and distinctly pronounced, as *creér, to believe; leér, to read*.

I. Y.

These letters are called *i Latin, and y Greek*: the former preserves it's natural pronunciation in composition, and is pronounced by all nations, as in these words, *visible, vision, terrible*: the latter has the same pronunciation; but when in composition is a consonant, and is pronounced as two *i i*, as *ayúda, help; ayúno, a fast*.

Of j called *i jota*. See letter G.

O

Has the same pronunciation as in *Latin* and *English*, in these words *thróno, throne; obediente, obedient*.

I

U.

U. V.

The Spanish language has two *u*'s as well as the Latin ; *u* vowel called by the Spaniards an open or square *u* ; and *v* consonant called *v* close, or *de Corazóncillo*, which always goes before the vowels, and is never joined to a consonant, nor ends any word. *U* vowel is pronounced as double *oo* in English, and these words *Cupido* a Cupid, *Cúra* a Curate or a Cure, are pronounced as if they were written thus *Coopido*, *coora* ; because the pronunciation of the words book *libro*, cook *cozinero*, is exactly the same as that of the *u* vowel in Spanish.

V consonant is pronounced by the Spaniards in the same manner as the *u* vowel ; tho' there are some authors who pretend to say, that it's pronunciation is a sound between that of *b* and *u*, but I see no manner of ground for this exception.

Observations upon the vowels.

A.

THIS letter has often the masculine accent, as *amará*, he will love ; *bará*, he will do it ; and the feminine, as *amára*, when I might love, in the last syllable. There are four diphthongs formed of this vowel when it goes before other vowels, as we shall shew hereafter.

A when by itself, stands for a preposition which denotes the dative case, as *dóí la preferéncia à Pédro*, I give the preference to Peter ; it governs also the accusative, as *yo ámo à Dios*, I love God ; denotes the part or place where one goes, as *vóí à Róma*, I go to Rome, it also precedes the accusative when before an infinitive governed by another verb, as *vámos à cenár*,

6 *The RUDIMENT S of*
cenár, let us go to supper ; à *passeár*, to walk ; à *jugár*,
to play.

When before the adverbs or adverbial moods it denotes the manner in which an action is executed, as à *sabiéndas*, knowingly ; à *truéco*, by changing ; rather purposely, à *brázo partido*, upon equal terms : à denotes likewise when a thing is to be done, as à *las doce del día*, at noon.

It is often an interjection, as à *señór fuláno*, ho there such a one ; à *señór Pédro*, ho there Peter.

It is taken for *con*, with, as *castíguese el oficial à pena capitál*, let the officer be punished with a capital punishment.

For *bácia*, towards, as *volvió la cabéza à tal parte*, he turned his head towards such a place.

For *pára*, for, as *condúce à éste fin*, it is proper for this end.

For *por*, by, as à *fuerza ganó la ciudad*, by force he gained the city.

For *según*, according, as à *la móda de Francia*, according to the French fashion.

For *si*, if, as à *sabér esto*, if I knew this—, upon knowing of this.

For *fino*, if not, unless, as à *no venir à tiempo*, if he should not come in time, &c.

For *en*, in, as à *vista de tal procedér que quiere que hágá*? upon sight of such proceeding what will you have me to do ?

And tho' there are many authors who are of opinion, that à stands for the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *havér*, to have, saying *aquél á*, I say that then it is to be written with an *b* thus *aquél bá*, observing the same in all the tenses and moods ; for *havér* is derived from the Latin verb *babere*, and regard being had to this there will happen no mistake or equivocation.

There are other authors who assert, that à stands for *bái*, there is, which is absolutely false ; for in the speeches which denote time, as à *un año que víne à Lóndres*,

Lóndres, it is a year since I came to London, à must be written with *b* thus *bá* abbreviated, or by the figure Apocope, because then it is the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *bacér*, to do, and is the same as *báce un año que víne à Lóndres*, according to the rule.

Apocope demit finem, quem dat Paragoge.

But of these we shall speak more at large in another place.

E.

E either is masculine, as in the last syllable of *amaré*, I shall love; *aprenderé*, I will learn; *enseñé*, I have taught; *oiré*, I shall hear, &c. or feminine, as *quándo amáre*, when I shall love; *quándo olvidáre*, when I shall forget; and it is so because the accent is not acute in these last examples.

Of the è, when before other vowels, may be formed four diphthongs.

E is sometimes used as a first person of the verb *bavér*, but then it must be written with *b*, saying *yo be comprádo un anillo de óro*, I havè bought a gold ring.

It is often a conjunction, and is used instead of y, when the following word begins with i vowel, as *los Holandéses è Ingléses*, the Dutch and the English *España è Italia*, Spain and Italy.

Poets often take the liberty to add the letter e at the end of some words using the figure Paragoge, saying *amóre* for *amór*, love, and this they do for the sake of the rhyme.

E is sometimes an interjection, but then b must be added to it, as *bé*, *que dices?* ha! what do you say? *bé*, *que quierés?* ha! what you will have? it stands likewise for an adverb, as *bé*, *la mugér*, see the woman.

I. Y.

The *Latin i* stands for a vowel in the *Spanish language*, and the *y* for a consonant ; but when a strong aspiration is required in the pronunciation, then *j* serves as a consonant, as *yá*, already ; *justo*, just.

When the accent is laid on the *i* as *leí*, *ví*, then it has a masculine pronunciation, and when not, a feminine one.

There are four diphthongs also formed from this vowel.

When *y* is by itself in a speech, it is generally a conjunction copulative, and sometimes suspensive, as *Juán y Pedro*, *y býuen*, *y córren*, *y peléan*, John and Peter, fly, run, and fight : But it must be observed, that when the following word begins with *i*, then by Euphonia è must be made use of instead of *y*, as *los Espanóles è Italianos*, *Francéses è Ingléses*, the Spaniards and the Italian, the French and the English.

I or *y* are sometimes put instead of *abí*, there, but as this use is merely voluntary it must be never used.

O.

This letter is also pronounced sometimes with a masculine accent, as *amó*, he loved ; *respondió*, he answered.

Four diphthongs are formed of this letter, when it precedes other vowels.

When the *o* is by itself in a speech, it is often a conjunction disjunctive, as *ò sábio*, *ò ignorante*, *ò brávo*, *ò covarde*, *ba de venir*, *con mígo*, let him be wise, or ignorant, or brave, or a coward, he must come with me.

It is likewise an interjection, as *ò maldad !* *ò dolór !* O wickedness ! O pain ! but of this we shall speak more largely in another place.

As an adverb, as *ò si yo fuéra rico*, O that I were rich.

U is

U.

U is sometimes pronounced with a masculine accent, as *tú*, *sú*, thou, his ; of it are likewise made four diphthongs.

When after *a g*, *u* is joined to *e* or *i*, then *u* loses its pronunciation ; and these words, *Guedéja*, a lock of hair ; *guía* a guide, are pronounced as in the English words of giddy, Guinea, or as in the French words *guerre*, war ; *guerir*, to cure. *Aguéro*, an omen ; *vergüenza*, shame, &c. are excepted.

When it is by itself in a speech, then it is a conjunction, or interjection, instead of *o*, when the word following begins with an *o*, as *impedimento* is *obstáculo*, impediment or obstacle.

Of the pronunciation of the Consonants.

B. b.

THIS letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, and as if it had an *e* after it, as in the English word *Bay*.

As to the letter *b*, its difference, and similitude of pronunciation with the letter *v*, we must refer the reader to the 2d chapter as to its proper place.

C, ç, Z.

C when before the letters *e i* is pronounced softer than *s*, as *cédro*, a cedar tree ; *ciélo*, heaven : when before the vowels *a o u*, is pronounced as *k*, as *cára*, the face ; *comér*, to eat ; *cúrda*, a cord or rope.

When *b* follows the letter *c*, it is pronounced as in the English cheese, *quéso* ; child, *níño-níña* ; thus are *cbánza*, a jest ; *chocoláte*, chocolate ; *cbíco*, little, small ; *múcko*, much : these words excepted *charidád*, charity ; *chóro*, a choir ; *Archángel*, an Archangel, &c. which are

The RUDIMENTS of
are derived from the Latin charitas, chorus, arch-
angelus, for c then is pronounced as k.

Upon the *Cedilla* formed with a small dash under it, I think it convenient to observe; first, that as by a resolution newly taken by the members of the Royal Academy at *Madrid*, the *ç* had been only invented to supply the defect of combination of *ce*, *ci*, in the three vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, in order to pronounce *ça*, *ço*, *çu*, instead of *ca*, *co*, *cu*; and this having taken place, and with the same softness as the *z*; the *ç* is reputed at present as superfluous; and the reason is, because *ç*, in the opinion of several authors, is not a different letter from the *z*, but the same differently formed, this being the reason why many authors have used both promiscuously, for their pronunciation are very much alike in these words, *çapatér*, *ozapatéro*, a shoe-maker; *cáça*, *cáza*, hunting, &c. Besides, because *ç* is not found in the mother tongues, and the *z* is; further the *z* is a general letter in the beginning, middle, and ending of any word, which cannot be said of the letter *ç*, for which reason, it often cannot be used in the middle of a word, and in the end never; no body having written as yet *almirantáçgo*, admiralty; *balláçgo*, a reward for a thing lost; *mereçeo*, I deserve; *padeçco*, I do suffer; *desliç*, a slipping; *luç*, light; *paç*, peace; *veloc*, swift. Wherefore I am of opinion that *ç* is superfluous in the *Spanish* language, and as such it's use must be avoided, placing the *z* in it's stead in every word where *ç* used to be.

But as *ç* is found in most of the *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that it's pronunciation is the same as that of *c* when before the vowels *e i*; because, as has been said, *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the vowels, *a*, *o*, *u*. And tho' a certain rule might be given to keep both the *ç* and the *z* in the said language, which is, to use the *ç* when a consonant precedes, as *alabâçga*, a praise; *enfeñâçga*, instruction, teaching,

&c,

&c. and to use *z* when a vowel goes before, and in the beginning and end of words, as *altéza*, highness; *razón*, reason; *zélo*, zeal; *lúz*, light, &c. but as the foregoing opinion is better grounded, I think it more right to take away the *z* and to use the *z*, as the modern authors do, whom I follow. *Z* is pronounced as the *English* pronounce the double *ff*.

D. d.

D has the same sound in *Spaniſh*, as in the *Latin* and other languages. And although there are several authors who are of opinion that *d* is not to be pronounced when at the end of a word, yet I am of a contrary opinion, and say that it always is to be pronounced if it is written, with this difference only, that when it ends a word, its sound is softer, laying the accent on the preceding vowel, as *amistád*, friendship; *bondád*, goodness, &c.

F f

Does not differ in its sound from that of the *Latin*, or of other languages; but it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* never use *ff* in their writings, as will be said afterwards, and if some do double them it is by way of a voluntary affectation. A certain author takes notice, that the *Spaniards* confound *f* with *pb*, or, to speak more proper, they use *f* instead of *pb*; I don't doubt but that in every nation there are ignorant people, but those who are skilled in Orthography ought to conform to the manner in which words are written in the original.

G. g. J. X.

G is only guttural before the vowels *e*, *i*, but *j* and *x* are always aspired, or guttural letters in the whole combination of the vowels, because in the same

same manner is pronounced *ja, je, ji, jo, ju*, as *xa, xe*, &c. *x* is not guttural in some words derived from the *Latin*, as *eximír*, to exempt; *exámen*, examination, &c. as it will be said in the 2d chapter, and when it goes before a consonant, as *excedér*, to exceed; *excitár*, to excite; *excluir*, to exclude; *excremén̄to*, excrement, &c.

G before the vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspired or guttural, and is pronounced as in other languages, as *gállo*, a cock; *gólpe*, a blow; *güsto*, taste, pleasure. I cannot agree with some authors, who say, that when *g* comes before *n* it is sunk in the pronunciation, because the men of learning in *Spain* generally pronounce it, as in *Ignácio*, Ignatius; *ignorár*, to be ignorant; *ignóto*, unknown; *magnánimo*, magnanimous; *magnífico*, magnificent, &c.

H.

Jórdan, Martinianus, Tominque, in his *Elench. Elem. P. II. Art. III.* *Littleton* in his *Latin Dictionary* lett. *H*, and other authors are of opinion that *H* (called by St *Jerom* an extensive vowel) is a letter for the following reasons.

First, a Letter is nothing else than *a note of a peculiar sound, and a single part of a syllable*; *h* is the same: therefore the *b* is a letter.

Secondly, The *b* comes originally from the *Hebrew* and *Greek* tongues; it was a letter with them: why then should it not be the same in the living languages? &c.

The *Spanish* authors place the *b* among the semi-vowels, because before and after it has a vowel in its pronunciation. See the abovesaid authors. But as the public has received the *b* with *Priscianus* as a note of aspiration and not as a letter, we must conform to it whether with reason or without it. *H* is generally pronounced so gently, that in many words it can scarce be perceived, as *bómbre*, a man; *bumilde*, humble;

humble ; but when *ue* follows *b*, then *bu* is pronounced as the English *w*; *búerta*, a garden; *buésped*, an host or guest ; *buésso*, a bone: like *wértá*, *wésped*, *wéssó*.

H after *c* is pronounced as in English, *churcb*, *mucb*, *iglézia*, *múcho*. Although some authors observe, that the Spaniards very rarely use the *b* after *p* and *t*, I say, that the Spanish tongue does not allow them the liberty to do it, and thus the learned must conform themselves to the etymology of words, saying *Thomás*, Thomas ; *Theología*, Theology or Divinity ; *Pbilosofía*, Philosophy.

K.

The Spaniards make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, as *Kalendário*, a Kalendar ; *Kalendas*, Kalends, the first day of the month, *Kyrie eleison*, &c. Greek ; and in proper names of cities, towns, &c. at *Kelmo*, *Kenard*, *Kunigunda*, &c. Saxen.

L. 1.

Besides the single *l*, there is a double *ll* in Spanish language as in the Latin, but differently pronounced : the single one is pronounced as in other languages, but the double *ll* as in the Italian *gl* in the words *Figli*, *Moglie*, &c. or as the double *ll* in French in the words *coquille*, *fille*, &c. which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*, as of *lláve*, a key ; *llovér*, to rain ; *callár*, to be silent, read *lliáve*, *liovér*, *caliár*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

It must be observed, that all words that have a doule *l* in the Latin, are written in Spanish with a single one.

M.

M is pronounced as in other languages, as *máno*, a hand ; *camino*, a way ; *mádre*, mother, &c. in what manner 'tis to be doubled, or when it is to be kept single

single in the composition we shall speak afterwards in chap. 3.

N.

There are two *n*'s in the *Spaniſh* language, one which is common to all languages, and is pronounced alike with them; another proper and peculiar to the *Spaniſh*, written thus *ñ*, which is equivalent to two *n n*, and is called *n con tilde*, and is pronounced as *gn* in *Italian* and *French*, or, as if it had an *i* after *n*, as in these words, *áño*, a year; *níño*, a child; *montaña*, a mountain; saying thus, *agno* or *anio*, *nigno* or *ninio*, &c.

P.

There is nothing to be observed in the letter *p*, but that its pronunciation is the same as in *Latin*, as *pán*, bread; *Pédro*, Peter.

Pb are used as *f*, and pronounced in the same manner; but that in writing *f* ought to be used for *pb* is an insupportable error: because with *pb* and not with *f* are to be written the following words, *Philóſopho*, a Philosopher; *Pbysico*, a Physician; *Pbysiología*, Philosophy, &c.

The *Latin p* is often changed into *b*, as of *recipere*, *recebir*, to receive; but of this we shall speak hereafter.

Q.

U always follows this letter as in other languages, and is pronounced in the same manner. When *ui* follows after *q*, then it is pronounced as if there was a *k* instead of *qu*, saying *quinto*, *kinto*, fifth, *quince*, *kince*, fifteen; but when it follows *ua* or *ue*, the *u* is pronounced, tho' not strong, as *queſtión*, a question; *consequéncia*, a consequence; *quátro*, four, &c. the following are excepted, *tóque*, lethim touch or ring;

ring ; *repique*, let him ring out ; *líquido*, liquid ; *que*, that ; *querér*, to be willing ; *quién*, who ; which are pronounced as if they were written with *k*.

R

No way differs in it's sound from the *Latin* and *English* ; but it must be observed, that at the beginning of words it is pronounced stronger than at the middle and end, because the initial *r* is equal to two *r r*, which always are pronounced with vehemence.

S.

S simple, as well as compound, is pronounced as in *Latin* : *cum amassem sanctos*, *como amásse los santos*, when I could love the saints ; *o altíssimo Dios*, O most high God : from whence it may be inferred, that all the preterimperfects of the optative, and the superlatives, are written and accented as in the *Latin*.

S in the *Spanish* is doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, of which we shall give sufficient notice in its place, but never is doubled at the end of words ; and when they begin in the *Latin* with *s* to which follows a consonant as *c, m, p, t*, then is added an *e*, as from *scholasticus* say *escolástico* ; *scribere*, *escribir* ; *smaragdus*, *esmeralda* ; *spina*, *espina* ; *spiritus*, *espíritu*.

T.

This letter is pronounced as in *Latin*, in the combination of all the vowels, as *Tácito*, *Taeto*, *tenaz*, &c. still or quiet, the sense of feeling, tenacious, in the middle of several words *t* is changed into *c*, and especially in words ending in *tia* and *tio*, as from *beneficentia* say *beneficéncia*, from *essentia*, *esséncia* ; *justicia*, *justicia*, &c. beneficence, essence, justice.

There

16 The RUDIMENT S of

There is no double *t* in the *Spaniſh* language.

When the original words have *tb*, they are to be written in the same manner in the *Spaniſh*; as *Cátbēdra*, *Catbólico*, *Matbéo*, *Theología*, pronouncing the *tb* as a single *t*.

X.

This is a guttural letter. Vid. Let. G.

I do only obſerve here, that all the *Spaniſh* words that begin with *x* are *Arabick*, except the following that come from the *Greek*, *Xanibénia*, a precious ſtone like amber in its colour; *Xánto*, a precious ſtone of a very yellow colour; *Xeníolo*, a ſmall gift; *Xenodócbio*, an hospice, or an inn for ſtrangers; *Xenón*, an habitation, a dwelling-place, a lodging; *Xenopárocbos*, officers appointed to provide for the Ambaſſadors; *Xyrotbéca*, the caſe wherein the Barbers put their razors and ſcissars; *Xyſto*, a gallery, a ſummer-house, or an open place to take the air about a garden.

Y. Vid. Let. I.

Z. Vid. Let. C.

C H A P. II.

Of the letters when in composition.

TH E only and ſure rule to reduce the *Castilian* language in perfection, is to write it as it is ſpoke, and really pronounced; it is by this only that it is diſtinguished, and exceeds all other languages, not excepting the *Latin*; I have ſaid the *Latin*, because that language joins the diphthongs, pronouncing only one letter, when they are wrote with two as *Celum* is pronounced *Celum*: but the *Castilian*

Castellan pronounces its diphthongs in such a manner, that without losing a letter it preserves the sound of both vowels in one syllable, as *alcáide*, *áire*, *réy*, *léy*, *buéy*, &c. this being agreeable to the sense which the Antients gave of the word *diphthong*, defining it thus: *Diphthongus est duarum in una syllaba vocalium sonus perceptus*, a diphthong is the distinct sound of two vowels in one syllable; for which reason I am of opinion, that the Antients pronounced *Latin* in the same manner that the *Spanish* is now pronounced; and if it was not foreign to my present purpose, I would prove clearly the time when and how the *Latin* pronunciation has been corrupted, and by what means the syneresis in the diphthongs was introduced, but as this suffices for the present, I shall proceed in my design.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse: But as there are many, who manage the *Castilian* tongue in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the consonants at their pleasure; to avoid such abuse it is proper to know,

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the Orthography are the following. First, the similitude of the pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed, and by the meer pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use: such are the *B* and *V* consonant, the *C* and the *Z* in the proper combinations, and in those of the *C*, in the two vowels *e* and *i*, the *G*, *J*, and *X* in the two vowels *e*, *i*, the *J* and *X* in their entire combinations; the *C* and the *Q*, and the *G* and *H*, in the combinations where the *u* interposes. Secondly, the use of the double consonants, which are commonly found in compound words, as *acceſſión*, *immortál*, *annotár*,

arreglár, dissimulár, &c. Thirdly, the use of many consonants which come together in various words, as *assumpto, santidád, demonstración, redempción, &c.* This being supposed.

I say, first, that the *B* ought not to be pronounced and written instead of the *V*, nor the *V* be confounded with the *B*; since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore it is absolutely necessary that their sound should be likewise different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found, because if they are derived from a word written with a *B*, as *Baculus, Beatus, Beneficium, bibere, bonus, &c.* they must be written with a *B*; and if from a word written with a *V*, they must be wrote so; as, *Vácuo, valér, vánō, vapór, vendér, venir, vída, &c.* which are derived from the Latin *vacuus, valere, vapor, vendero, venire, vita*.

For which reason all the preterimperfects of the indicative mood must be wrote with *B*, and not with *V*, as is usual, saying, *amába, cantába, bablába, orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam, cantabam, toquebar, orabam*.

It must be observed likewise, that when in the original of a word there is a *P*, then the *B* must be used and not the *V*, because from *caput, concipere, lupus, sapiens, &c.* comes *cabéza, concebir, lóbo, sábio*.

Before the letters *L* and *R*, the *B* must always be put and not the *V*, saying *amáble, dábile, dóble, bá-blar, abríg, brávo, Hómbre, Póbret*.

Therefore that barbarous distinction ought to be avoided which ignorance has introduced, viz. that there must not be two *BB's* or two *VV's* in one word; because, if they are in the root they ought to be used, as in *Bárba, Bebér, Bárbaro, vivécidád, vivir, viviente, volver, &c.*

And when the original of words is doubtful, I am of opinion that we ought to use the *B*, and not the *V*, the pronunciation of the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than that of the second.

I say, 2dly, that the *f* called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the *Spaniſh* tongue, and therefore the *Z* ought to be used in its stead, in all words whatsoever, as was said in chap. i. Lett. *C*.

But it ought to be taken notice of, that the words ending in *Z* which are derived from the *Latin*, ought to change the *Z* into *C* in the plural, because it is so found in the original, and thus *feliz*, *luz*, *páz*, *véz*, *vóz*, make in the plural *felices*, *lúces*, *páces*, *véces*, *vóces*.

Hitherto has been written *bazér*, *dezir*, but these verbs being derived from *facere* and *dicere*, now the *Z* is changed into *C*, conformable to the original, and now we say *bacér*, *decir*, observing the same rule in all their derivatives.

I say, 3dly, that *G* being guttural only before the *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives, such are *affigír*, *cogér*, *colegír*, *elegír*, *protegír*, *regír*, &c. writing *aflige*, *cóge*, *colige*, *elíge*, *protége*, *ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

When the infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *ér* or *ír* into *a* or *o* as in the present, then the *G* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the infinitive may be preserved; and thus from *figír* say *finjo*, *finja*, from *Regír*, *Ríjo*, *Ríja*, &c.

All words which in their original have *g*, *i*, or *l*, are written with *j* and not with *x*, as from *longe* say *léjos* from *Tagus*, *Tájo*; from *tegula*, *téja*; *jaetánia*, *jaetánchez*; *jaspis*, *jáspé*; *jurare*, *jurár*; *justitia*, *justícia*; *juvenis*, *jóven*; from *consilium*, *conséjo*; *Filius*, *Hijo*; *melior*, *mejór*, in all the combination of the vowels; and when the infinitives end in *jar*, the *j* must be kept in all the tenses without exception.

In these words *Magestád*, *Mugér*, *Tráge*, &c. common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If the words have *x* in their original, as *Texér*, *exémplo*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexíga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that when the words have the letter *s* in their original, as *cáxa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xémé*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *cap-sa*, *deserere*, *sapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, are to be written always with *x* and not with *j*; and the reason of it is, because the *s* has the sound somewhat like the *x*, and as the Spaniards do take the guttural pronunciation from the *Arabians*, and they pronounce the double *ss* as *x*, it cannot be absurd to change *s* into *x*.

Nouns ending in *x*, as *Bóx*, *Baláx*, *Relóx*, &c. keep the *x* in the plural; as well as all the verbs, which have *x* in the infinitive mood are to keep it in all the tenses, as from *baxár*, *dexár*, &c. say *báxo*, *baxába*, *Baxé*, &c.

Q is frequently in vulgar writings changed into *C*, but the true rule is to be guided by the original *Latin*: otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted; from *C* are formed *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cúrda*, &c. and from *Q* *quál*, *qua-sión*, *quátro*, &c.

It is an impropriety, that many fall into of using *u* and *i* vowels instead of *y* and *v* consonants: but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all correct writers, and exploded by the *Spanish Academy*: having established the letter *y* to be always a consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always laid on the annexed vowel, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, a rivulet, or a brook. It must be likewise avoided to put the *y* immediately before or after a consonant, or at the end of a verb or word, except the following *Léy*, *Réy*, *Buéy*, &c.

The Spaniards, to retain the softness of the sound of the *Latin* consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* consonant, as in *adjuvare*, *jejunare*, *jacere*, which the Spaniards make *ayudár*, *ayunár*, *yacér*: and in conformity to the *Greek*, in words borrowed from that language, they preserve it as a vowel, Σύμβολον, *Musíeion*, Ἀξυμός, *Mártir*. *Symbolo*, *Mystério*, *ázymo*, *Mártir*. So likewise in the third conjugation of verbs, as *argúyo*, *argúyes*, *argúye*, I dispute, &c. but in the imperfect say thus: *arguía*, &c. the accent being to be put on the vowels and never on consonants, the same is the first person of the preterpect, as *arguí*, I disputed, &c. the Spaniards likewise say at present, *dóî*, I give; *estóî*, I am; *bóî*, to day, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of the use of letters doubled.

E and **O** are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come nearer to the radical pronunciation, as *Acree-dór*, *Creér*, *Leér*, *Cooperár*, *Loór*: in which both the vowels are pronounced distinctly. And it is on the contrary, wrong in some, who superfluously add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*, as in *Fee*, *Veer*, instead of *Fé*, *Vér*.

As to consonants, the variety is great, but to avoid all affectation, and speak properly it is to be observed, that *C* is never to be doubled before the vowels *A*, *O*, *U*, or before consonants, and we therefore write *Acaécer*, *Acomodár*, *Ocásô*, *Ocasión*, *Acusár*, *Acumulár*, *Aclamár*, &c. But before the vowels *E* and *I*, *C* is doubled in such words as are derived from the *Latin*, and had them originally, as *Accelerár*, *Accéssô*, *Accénto*, *Occidénte*, except the following words *Aceptár* and *Sucedér*,

because altho' in their original they have two *c c*, they are not specified in the pronunciation by the Spaniards.

Latin words terminating in *ctio*, change the *t* into *C*, as *Acción*, *Cocción*, *Dicción*, *Lección*, *Producción*. And if either of these two *C*'s were omitted, the derivation would be the less evident.

M and not *N* is always to be made use of before *B*, *M*, *P*, as *Ambiente*, *immortal*, *império*.

Words compounded of the Latin prepositions *In* and *Con*, follow the Latin rule of turning *In* into *Im*, and *Con* into *Com*, as *Immaculado*, *Immediato*, *Immemorial*, *Immortal*, &c. *Commensurar*, *Comovér*, *Commutár*, &c. In all which words the *M* is doubled, tho' in several other common words one *M* is lost, as *Comercio*, *Común*, *comunión*, &c. Some change *Im* into *Em*, as *Emmascarado*, *emmagrecér*, *Emmudecér*, &c.

N is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *An*, *En*, *In*, *Con*, as *Annexión*, *Annotár*, *Connatural*, *Connexión*, *Ennegrecér*, *Ennoblecér*, *Innáto*, *Innocente*, *Innovár*, &c. except *Anulár*, *Anunciár*, *Anillo*, &c.

The letter *R* is doubled in the words that have a strong pronunciation in the middle; as *Abórro*, *Bórra*, *Errór*, *Guerra*, *Pérro*, &c. Those words that have one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly, as *árta*, an altar; *aréna*, sand; *íra*, wrath. There is no word in the Spanish language that begins or ends with two *rr*, but the initial *R* has always a strong sound, as *rábia*, rage; *razón*, reason; *rectór*, rector; *reñir*, to quarrel, &c. it must be observed, that when any consonant precedes the *R*, then *R* is never doubled, and it would look but barbarous to write these words with two *rr*, *bónra*, honour; *bonróso*, honourable; *enriquecer*, to grow rich, &c. because the preceding consonant makes the pronunciation strong, so that the *r* is only to be doubled when between two vowels, as *tierra*, earth; *errór*, an error.

S is to be doubled in the words that have two *ff* in their original, as *assár*, to roast; *cessár*, to cease; *esséncia*, essence; *necessidád*, necessity; the same is to be observed in the second preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, as *amásse*, I might love; *enseñásse*, I might teach; *buviésse*, I might have: in all the superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, most loving; *beatíssimo*, most holy, most happy; *doctíssimo*, most learned; and in adverbs superlatives, as *doctíssimamente*, wisely; so are the words *acesso*, access; *congréssso*, congress; *excesso*, excess; *progréssso*, progress; and all the compounds of simple words that begin with *s*, as of *saltár*, to jump, comes *assaltár*, to assault; of *senir*, to be sensible, or to feel, comes *assentir*, to assent, of *susto*, fright, comes *assustár*, to frighten.

The two *l l*, which in *Spanisb* have a peculiar pronunciation, are doubled before the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when in Latin *c*, *f*, *p*, &c. precedes *l*, as *lláno*, plain; *llánto*, crying, grief; *lláve*, a key; *lláma*, flame; *lleno*, full; *llorár*, to cry; *llovér*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain; as it will be said at large in the treating of the formation of the *Spanisb* words from the *Latin*, which will be put at the end of this Grammar.

The said consonants only are to be doubled in the *Spanisb* tongue, because no body now pronounces two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ff*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w*. This is the method newly taken of the Royal Academy of *Madrid*, and this is that which the modern authors follow.

C H A P. IV.

Of the rules that are to be observed upon the concurrence of divers consonants.

FROM two to four are the consonants, which occur together between two vowels, of which there is some diversity in writing, which varies from the manner in which they are pronounced, and are *BST*, *BSTR*; *CT*, *CTR*; *MPC*, *MPT*; *NCT*, *NSC*, *NSCR*, *NSP*, *NST*, *NSTR*; *SC*; *XC*, *XCL*, *XPL*, *XPR*, *XQ*, *XT*, *CTR*; to understand which observe the following rules.

Rule I. The letters *BST* and *BSTR* are to be pronounced in all the words in which they occur, according to their original, as *abstener*, to abstain; *abstinencia*, abstinence; *obstáculo*, obstacle; *substituir*, to substitute; *abstrabér*, to make an abstract; *abstrácto*, an abstract; because they are all distinctly pronounced in the Spanish.

Rule II. *CT*, and *CTR*, are also to be pronounced and written as in the original, as *dócto*, learned; *doctór*, doctor; *récto*, right; *doctrina*, doctrine; *pléctro*, a quill, used to play upon the strings of a harp; and this without any exception, otherwise it would appear an affectation.

Rule III. In the words in which concur *MPC* and *MPT* the letter *P* is lost, because it is not really pronounced in *assumpción*, assumption; *exempción*, exemption; *redempción*, *redemptór*, *promptitud*, &c. so that they are to be written thus *assumción*, &c.

I cannot pass over an observation which occurs to me here, and is that the gentleman of the Academy change *MP* into *N*, being of opinion that the said words are to be pronounced thus *assunción*, *redención*: for which resolution I cannot see nor find any other foundation,

foundation, than the mere affectation of pronouncing *M* as *N* (an abuse which I observed when at *Madrid*) confounding in it not only the *Spanish* but even the pronunciation of the *Latin* tongue: I say, that I observed many to pronounce the words of Transubstantiation thus: *boc est enim corpus meum*, instead of saying with distinction and clearness, *boc est enim corpus meum*. I can't but be much surprised that an academic body, and such as that of the Royal Academy of *Madrid* composed of persons of such learning and eminency, had taken no notice of the like abuse, and to give to the *M* the pronunciation as they ought in the combination of all the vowels, there being no reason to make the least alteration in it.

Rule IV. When *nēt* occur together in *Latin*, all the letters are often preserved in *Spanish* in writing, but the *c* is hardly, if at all pronounced in speaking, as *sáncto*, *santidád*, *distínto*, *púncto*, &c. write *sánto*, *santidád*, &c.

NSC and *NSCR* are to be pronounced in the words where they are found, as *transcendental*, *conscripto*, *inscripto*, this word *consciéncia* excepted, in which the *s* is not specified.

NSP and *NST* are retained in the *Spaniſh*, as *conspiración*, *transparente*, *transposición*, *transportár*, *transplantár*, *constár*, *constáncia*, *constitución*, *institución*, &c. the use of the letters *NSTR* must be kept in the words *constreñir*, *construir*, *construcción*, *demonstrable*, *demonstración*, *instruir*, *instrucción*, *ménstruo*, *mónstruo*, &c. which otherwise happens in *mostrar*, *mostradór*, *mostréncó*, and their derivations in which *n* is omitted.

N. B. It is to be observed by the by, that the *n* is lost in these words *Trasteár*, *Trasladár*, *Trasládo*, *Trasfucír*, *Trasnochár*, *Traspalar*, *Traspáſſo*, *Traſtrocár*, for the reason of being so admitted: but is preserved in the following *Transferír*, *Transfiguración*,

26 *The RUDIMENTS of*
Trasgredíon, Translación, Transmigración, Transmular,
Transformar, Transsubstanciación, Transversal.

Rule V. The two consonants *S C* are to be retained in those words, in which the vowels *a* or *u* follows them, as *escála*, *escáma*, *escóta*, *escuélia*, *escória*, *Pescádo*, *Pescúezo*: and although the *s* is not pronounced in the words *apacentár*, *adolecér*, *conciéncia*, *ciéncia*, *conocér*, *crecer*, *florecer*, *pacér*, yet it is retained in *ascendér*, *ascendéncia*, *ascen-*
dénte, *adolescéncia*, *condecedér*, *descendér*, *descenñir*, *aqueſcénzia*, *disceptación*, *discernír*, *disciplina*, *discí-*
pulo, *miscelánea*.

Rule VI. *XC*, when between two vowels, are to be pronounced if they are so in the original, as *excélo*, *éxcelente*, *excídio*, *excommunión*, *excusa*, *excusár*, &c. without exception. The like is to be observed in the concurrence of *XCL* and *XCR*, as *exclamár*, *excluir*, *excremento*, &c. as likewise when after *x* follow *p* alone, *pl*, or *pr*, as *experiéncia*, *exposición*, *explanár*, *explicár*, *explorár*, *expri-*
mír. And lastly, when *q* or *t* follow *x* their original is to be attended to, as *exquisito*, *extendér*, *exterioridad*, *extinguír*; *extrabér*, *extremo*, *extrangero*, *extraordinário*, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of the Diphthongs.

TH E concurrence of two vowels, which compose but one syllable, is so frequent in the Spanish tongue, that the like is hardly to be found in any other. For tho' the vowels are but five, yet they admit twenty combinations; to which *Anthony de*

de Nebrixa, in his treatise of the Spanish Orthography, gives the name of diphthongs; *Valéra, Sandoval*, on the Rudiments of the Grammar, and several other authors are of the same opinion, tho' *Renfigo* in his poetical treatise attributes the joining of the two vowels in one syllable to the figure *Syneresis*. But as it is said in the 2d chapter, a diphthong is a perceptible sound of the two vowels in one syllable, and as in the following examples, the combination of the vowels make only one syllable in the Spanish tongue, they are admitted as diphthongs, and both vowels pronounced with some distinction, and a perceptible sound, *viz.*

In *ae*, as *acaecimiento*, accident; *albalaes*, a sort of bills of the court of justice.

In *ai*, as *aire*, air; *alcáide*, a governor of a castle.

In *ao*, as *chaos*, a confusion; *daos*, do ye give, or give ye.

In *au*, as *causa*, cause; *cautela*, caution.

In *ea*, as *beatitud*, blessedness, holiness; *fea* from *ser*, to be, pres. optative.

In *ei* or *ey*, as *péine*, a comb; *réino*, a kingdom; *léy*, the law; *réy*, king.

In *eo*, as *Geometría*, Geometry; *beodéz*, drunkenness.

In *eu*, as *déuda*, a debt; *féudo*, a fief.

In *ia*, as *liadúra*, a binding; *súzia* or *suzia*, a foul dirty thing.

In *ie*, as *Ciélo*, Heaven; *miédo*, fear.

In *io*, as *súfio*, adj. dirty, foul; *dió*, he gave.

In *iu*, as *ciudad*, a city; *viudo*, a widower.

In *oa*, as *lóa*, praise; *loáble*, praise-worthy.

In *oi*, as *dói*, I give; *bói*, this day; *fói*, I am.

In *oe*, as *béroe*, an hero; *roedúra*, a gnawing.

In *ou*, as *Coutiño*, the surname of a family, or a shed in a park; *Móura*, a town, or a surname of a family.

In

28 *The RUDIMENT S* of

In *ua*, as *quál*, which ; *cuájo*, rennet to make cheese.

In *ue*, as *bueno*, good ; *fuégo*, fire.

In *ui*, as *buitre*, a vulture ; *cuidado*, care.

In *uo*, as *água*, I water, or mix water to wine,
&c. *mútuo*, mutual.

But it must be observed, that not always the two vowels tho' joined together compose one syllable or a diphthong : because when the accent is put on the last, then they form two vowels, *cáe*, *bó*, *ráe*, *mútuo* are monosyllables, and the same vowels in *caér*, *oí*, *raér*, *mutuó* make two syllables.

It must be noted also, that in the concurrence of those vowels, the *i* is always the Latin one, and not *y* ; and so it would be a notorious error to make use of the *y* in these words, writing *áyre*, *búytre*, *réyno*, *toysón*, when they are to be written thus *áire*, *búitre*, &c. because the *i* does not strike as the *y* on another vowel : except from this rule all the nouns terminated in *y* which in plural is made consonant, *réyes*, *léyes*, *buéyes*.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is the sounding of three vowels put together in one syllable, and are five in Spanish, viz.

In *iai*, as *decíais*, ye did say ; *bebíais*, ye were drinking.

In *iao*, as *avíaos*, make ye ready ; *precíaos*, let ye be valued.

In *iei*, as *envicíeis*, that you may corrupt ; *senten-cíeis*, that you may give sentence.

In *uai*, as *agúais*, ye put water into the liquor ; *gúaj*, a lass.

In *uei*, as *juguéis*, that ye may play ; *buitre* for *buitre*, a vulture.

*There

There are some authors who add another diphthong of *ieu*, but in this they must be deceived, because the *i* or *u* in the nouns where *ieu* is found, are consonants, as *Arroyuelo*, a little brook; *vive*, live thou.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Accents, &c.

ACCE N T S are tones in speaking, of which there are two sorts in *Spanish*, the *Grave* and *Acute*. *Grave* is that which descends obliquely from the left to the right thus ' , and is only used in the *Spanish* language on the four vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when each is separate, and makes a perfect sense by itself. *Acute* is that which descends from the right to the left thus ' , and serves to prolong, make acute and strong the pronunciation, as *arnés*, armour; *amó*, he loved; *amará*, he will love; and it is also used to denote the quantity of the syllable.

But the most common use of the acute is to shew upon what syllable the strength of the pronunciation lies, for some words quite alter their signification according to the placing of the accent; as *cántara*, a sort of measure or pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *cantará*, he will sing; *lívro*, a book; *libró*, he delivered, discharged, or gave a bill. When two or three consonants follow a vowel, there is no necessity to mark the accent upon it, their pronunciation being long by nature: the words whose consonants are mute or liquid are excepted, as *árbitro*, an arbitrator; *cátedra*, a chair in which a professor teaches

30 The RUDIMENTS of

teaches any science ; *lúgubre*, mournful ; the same is to be observed in the words called *esdrúxulos*, dactyles ; as *águila*, an eagle ; *música*, musick ; *máximo*, greatest ; which have the accent in the antepenultima. From whence is inferred, how erroneous is the opinion of those who make use of the Grave accent instead of the Acute, without understanding the sense of these words ; because the accent Grave never makes a syllable long, but depresses and moderates the pronunciation.

To clear these things, and that it may be known where the accent might be laid on the Spanish words, I insert here the following rules.

R U L E I.

All Spanish words are derived from the Latin, have their accent on the same syllable as in the Latin words, when in the ablative case of the singular, (because, as I intend to say hereafter, the Spanish words are formed from the ablative singular of the Latin words) except when they retain the Latin nominative, as *sénix*, *régimen*, *sál*, &c. viz.

Latin.	Spanish.	English.
<i>Aquila</i> ,	<i>Aguila</i> ,	an Eagle.
<i>Amicus</i> ,	<i>Amigo</i> ,	a Friend.
<i>Baculum</i> ,	<i>Baculo</i> ,	a Staff.
<i>Clericus</i> ,	<i>Clérigo</i> ,	a Clergyman.
<i>Limes</i> ,	<i>Límite</i> ,	a Limit, or Bound.
<i>Pontifex</i> ,	<i>Pontífice</i> ,	a Pontiff, the Pope.
<i>Prudens</i> ,	<i>Prudente</i> ,	Prudent.
<i>Spiritus</i> ,	<i>Espíritu</i> ,	a Spirit.
<i>Terminus</i> ,	<i>Término</i> ,	a Term, or Limit.
<i>Vapor</i> ,	<i>Vapór</i> ,	a Vapor.

All the superlatives in *íssimo*, and *íssima*, have their accent in the antepenultima in Latin, as *aman-tíssimo-ma*,

téssimo-ma, most loved; *castíssimo-ma*, most chaste; *beatíssimo-ma*, most holy, &c. add to these *ínfimo*, lowest, meanest, *íntimo*, intimate; *máximo*, greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *óptimo*, best; *próximo*, nearest neighbour; *último*, utmost, last, &c.

Rule II. Of the penultima syllable.

ALL words ending in *ía*, which denote some office, quality, passions of mind, place, or an aggregation of several things, have their accent on the penultima, as

Alcaldía, the office of a magistrate.

Alegria, mirth, &c.

Clericía, the clergy.

Especería, a grocer's shop.

Enfermería, an apartment for the sick.

Librería, a library.

Herrería, a smith's shop.

Hospedería, a place to entertain strangers in,

&c.

Panadería, a baker's shop.

Mejoría, growing better.

Menoría, minority.

Señoría, lordship.

Of this kind are the words that have any of these vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, before another vowel in the penultima, as

Albaéa, an executor of a will.

Aldéa, a village.

Bilbáo, Bilboa.

Boleo, the flight of a ball.

Corréa, a leather strap.

Corréo, a post-mail.

Floréo, a flourish.

Grangéa, gain, purchase, &c.

Livréa, livery.

Lóa, praise.

Píca, a soldier's pike, or a fish so called.

Regadéo, merry-making,

&c.

Except

Except *área*, an area ; *fránea*, a dart ; *foráneo*, belonging to the court of judicature ; *idóneo*, apt ; *incorpóreo*, incorporeal ; *mónstruo*, a monster, &c. which have the accent in antepenultima.

To this rule belong, all the words which carry the diphthongs in the penultima, as

Amáine, let him strike sail ; *báile*, a ball, *náipes*, playing cards ; *apláuso*, applause, &c. without exception.

The diminutives do likewise belong to this rule, as *asníco*, *asnillo*, a little ass ; *boníco*, *bonito*, somewhat pretty, &c.

Rule III. Of the last syllable.

AL L nouns ending in *d*, *i*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *x*, *z*, have their accent on the last syllable, as those in

B. *Abád*, an Abbot ; *beldád*, beauty ; except *áspid*, an asp ; *huésped*, an host, a landlord.

I. *Albelí*, a clove-gilliflower-violet, *bocací*, buckram, &c. except *cási*, almost.

L. *animál*, *caracól*, a snail ; *generál*, except *ágil*, nimble, active ; *ángel*, angel ; *apóstol*, apostle, *cónsul*, consul ; *fácil*, easy ; *defícil*, difficult, &c.

N. *Afán*, labour, weariness ; *almidón*, starch ; except *crímen*, crime ; *exámen*, examination ; *imágen*, an image ; *jóven*, youth ; *márgen*, margin ; *órden*, order ; and other Latin words.

R. *Amór*, love ; *mugér*, a woman ; except *acíbar*, aloes ; *alcázar*, a castle, palace ; *almíbar*, sugar, boiled to a consistence, *ánsar*, a goose, &c.

S. *Ambagrís*, ambergrise ; *anís*, anniseed ; except *ántes*, rather ; *árlos*, shrubs ; *agátas*, on all four like a cat ; *à sabiéndas*, knowingly, designedly ; *de brúces*, with the mouth downwards ; *en-tónces*, then, &c.

X. *Almoradúx*, the sweet marjoram ; *baláx*, a precious stone, &c. without exception.

Z. *Arcadúz*, aqueduct ; *Albornóz*, a sort of upper garment used by the Moors, &c. except *Alférez*, an ensign, &c.

All adverbs of place have their accent on the last syllable, as *acá*, hither ; *acullá*, yonder ; *allá*, thither ; *allí*, there ; *dó*, where ; *adó*, to what place ; *dedó*, from whence ; *aquí*, here, &c. and the following words : *albalá*, a sort of writing ; *Alcalá*, a name of a city in Spain, &c.

As the accent will be put upon the verb through all their tenses and moods, according to order in the conjugations, it will be needless to speak of them here.

C H A P. VII.

Of the manner of Pointing.

TH E want of distinctions in clauses makes writing very imperfect, and to put them in an improper place, causes such *equivocation* in the sense, that this sense either is not understood, or at least is confounded. For which reason, and for the proper division of words, and clauses of periods and speeches ; it must be known, that there are eight signs, notes, or particles, used to this purpose.

I. *Comma*, *subdistinction*, *encise*, or a stroke formed thus (,) and so called to denote the half suspension, or pause, which denotes the expectation of something else to follow ; it serves likewise di-

D distinctly

distinctly to separate one clause from another, as *Felicidád es de un Réino tener un Príncipe sábio, que abráze lo bueno, y evíte lo malo, baciéndo justicia a todos*, it is a happiness to a kingdom to have a wise Prince, that embraces the good, and shuns evil, doing justice to every body.

2. A full stop formed thus (.) serves to denote, that the period is quite formed, and that the speech is perfectly concluded : as *nádie se alabe, basta que acábe*. Let no body praise himself, till he gets what he is about. *Albricias madre, que pregónan a mi pádre*, give me something mother for my good news, for they are crying my father ; said of people that mistake good news for bad, or rejoice in other's misfortunes.

3. Comma and a point thus (;) formed ; (called by the Greeks an imperfect Colon, or Semicolon) is used to denote the implication and contradiction of things in the speech, or that they differ, as *los Pádres son dignos de reverencia ; Pero Dios de adoración*, Fathers deserve a reverence or respect ; but God worship. *Pédro es sabio ; pero su sobérbia le deslúce*. Peter is a wise man ; but his pride dishonours him.

4. Two points (called by the Greeks a perfect Colon) marked thus (:) serve to denote that the sense is not perfectly expressed in the speech, and that there is something wanting to perfect it : as *no hacér mal alguno es innocencia : no hacér mal a ótro es justicia*, to do no evil is innocence : but justice to wrong no body. *La injuria si es verdád, tómala por adverténcia : si es mentira, por crédito*, the injury if it is true, take it as a warning : if false, for reputation and credit.

5. Note of Interrogation formed thus (?) denotes that something is asked or questioned : as *a donde vás ? where you are going ? &c.*

6. A note of Admiration thus (!) express the affection of mind and surprise caused by a sudden

news or consideration of something : as *O Cielos!*
O Heaven! ò *bondad divina!* O divine goodness!
ò *tiempos!* O times! ò *vicios!* O vices! ò *costumbres!*
O customs! ò *depravados siglos!* O corrupted age!

7. A Parenthesis thus () serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain, and to avoid confusion : as *el ministro sábio (que juntamente es desinterzado)* es digno de toda alabanza, a wise minister (who is altogether disinterested) is worthy of every body's praise.

8. Dieresis thus : (") is a Greek word (called by the Printers Crema, and signifies a severing or division) and serves to separate two vowels which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly and with distinction. Anciently this mark was put upon the *u*, and *i* vowels, when before another vowel ; because there was no difference made in writing between the *i* and *u*, to shew when they ought to be vowels and when consonants ; now this division is to be put on the *u* : as *eloquente*, eloquent ; *frequencia*, frequency. And this only in the words where *u* is pronounced plainly and openly ; so that there is no need of a Dieresis in these *guerra*, war ; *guía*, guide ; *guinda*, a common cherry ; *quince*, fifteen.

To these add the note of Division or stroke figured thus (-) which is put at the end of a line, when the word is divided or cut, that it may be known that it is not finished : as in these (carefully dividing each syllable as children in spelling) *á-nimo*, *áni-mo*, courage, mind ; it cannot be divided thus : *án-im-o*, nor thus *anim-o* : in the words where two *ss*, *rr*, &c. are found, then the first consonant is pronounced with the preceding vowel, and the second with the following, and so *accidente*, accident ; and

D 2 *boníssimo*,

boníssimo, the best, the most pretty or better are to be divided thus *ac-cidente* or *acciden-te*, *bonis-simo*.

Apostrophe is a stroke put over some letters to denote that another letter, which ought to be there, is left out, and lost by the figure *Synaléphe* of the following vowel: as *d'el* of him, *del'água*, of water; *qu'éra*, which was; *s'omítē*, it is omitted. Which manner is much used in the *English*, and *French* languages; and tho' in old *Spaniſh* books it is often observed, yet common use has left it off in the *Spanish* language, as an insignificant thing, which often confounds; so that by joining the letters are single words formed, saying *del*, *otro*, the other; *estótro*, this other; or writing the two *ee* or *ea* for better intelligence, thus *de el*, *éste ótro*, *éste ótro*, *que éra*, *se ofende*, &c.

Of the use of capital letters.

W I T H capital letters are to begin any writing, paragraph, period, or speech, after a final point; all the proper names, as well of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. as the surnames, renowns of authority or fame; those of dignities, titles, honourable employments, and other names of distinction, as King, Prince, &c. and altho' capital letters should be used at the beginning of each verse; yet the *Spaniards* are not exact in this point, for they only begin the verses of their heroic and grand Poems with capital letters, being careless in other species of poetry.

P A R T II.

Of E T Y M O L O G Y.

GREAT is the difference between the mother-
ly or dead tongues, and the modern or
living ones: because what the first of its firmness
or stability will not allow the liberty of inventing
or changing a word, case, nor tense, without the
risk of committing a barbarism or solecism; the
latter, being in the arbitrary power of the living,
is nourished, either by adding some words, per-
fecting those in use, or forgetting those which in it's
stuttering age were used. To this was likewise
subject the *Latin* tongue, till it was cultivated by
Cicero, *Plautus*, *Virgil*, &c. it sprang up in time
of *Janus* and *Saturnus*, in whose language the
priests of *Mars* wrote those verses called by their
name *Salii*, which are kept in reverence or respect
of the age, which shews the unpolished infancy
of that language: it increased in time of *Latius*,
from whence was derived the *Latin*, when the
twelve law tables were written in *Latin*; and was
perfect in the flourishing age of the *Romans*: but as
soon as their empire finished, the language fell with
it, degenerating in such a manner, that at present
is looked on as half corrupted, there being so many
barbarisms in its Latinity.

For which like reason, many are the words which
the tyrant Use has introduced in the *Spanish* lan-
guage, whose root has no other trench than the
good pleasure of men; and other words are so
much degenerated from their original, that almost
deny their birth: as *desabuciár*, to desert (is called
Physician's verb, and is only used to express when

a man is given over by the Physicians) from the *Latin fiducia*, but has quite opposite sense ; *lavár*, to wash ; from *lódo*, mud, mire, or dirt.

Many have been the authors who treated on Etymologies, but who treated with better order and method was St *Isidore*, a Spaniard, whose rules has followed the Royal Academy at *Madrid* in their new dictionary of the *Spanish* language ; to which I refer the curious.

Etymology (as a part of the Grammar) denotes and shews the way to find out the cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, their regularity and irregularity, and the variety of parts in a speech ; some authors define Etymology thus : *The knowledge and discretion of the parts and particles of a speech.* And to proceed to particulars, we think it proper to begin with

C H A P. I.

Of the eight parts of speech, and especially of Nouns.

IN *Spaniſh* as well as in *Latin*, there are eight parts of speech.

Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle.	}	Adverb, Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection,
declin'd. undeclin'd.		

Of a Noun.

AN Noun is a part of speech, which signifies a thing without any reference to time, &c. as *máno*, a hand ; *casa*, a house.

Nouns

Nouns are divided into substantives and adjectives.

A noun substantive is that which can stand by itself, without an adjective, as *hombre*, a man; *caballo*, a horse, &c. whereas the adjective cannot stand by it self, as being of no value without the addition of the substantive, as *bueno*, good; *brioso* mettlesome, &c. give no perfect notion of themselves, but are explained by being conjoined to the substantives, as *hombre bueno*, a good man; *caballo brioso*, a mettlesome horse.

Nouns substantives are divided into proper names and appellatives. The proper names are such as signify certain determinate things, as *Juan*, John; *Roma*, Rome. Appellatives are those that signify things undeterminate, as *iglesia*, a church; *casa*, a house. Some of the nouns are called primitives, that is original; others derivatives for their being derived of others, as *lección*, *oído*. Nouns are again divided into simple, as *justo*, just; and compound, as *injusto*, unjust.

There are also diminutives and augmentatives, in both which the Spanish abounds more than any other language, there being no word but what admits of several diminutives, to represent the thing spoken of, little; and augmentatives, to represent it greater.

Diminutives are formed by adding to the word *ijo*, *ico*, *ito*, *ete*, *uelo*, or *ejo*, and sometimes *ote*.

For Example,

Hombre, a man; forms *Hombrecillo*, *Hombrecico*,
Hombrecito.

Muchacho, a boy; *Muchachillo*, *Muchachico*,
Muchachito, *Muchachuélo*.

Where observe the difference between these several sorts, which is that those ending in *illo* and *uelo*, as

Hombrecillo, *Muchachuelo*, and the like, denote something of contempt, as, a pitiful little man or boy ; whereas those ending in *ico*, or *ito*, only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as when we say *Juanico* or *Juanito*, which is *Johnny* or *Jacky*.

Diminutives in *ete* and *ino* likewise denote nothing but smallness, as *mózo*, a youth ; *mozete*, a young lad ; *paloma*, a dove ; *palomino*, a young pigeon ; whereas those in *ejo* imply at the same time something of contempt or dislike, as *cubillo*, a knife ; *cubillijo*, a pitiful little knife ; *bidalgo*, a gentleman ; *bidalgote*, an inconsiderable gentleman.

The same is also used in adjectives, as *grande*, large or great ; *grandezillo*, *grandezico*, *grandezuelo*, *grandete*, all which signify *largish*, as we may express it, or *somewhat large*.

There are moreover diminutives formed upon diminutives ; as *chico*, small ; *chiquito*, smaller than the other, and *chiquitico*, very small.

There are on the other hand augmentatives, as has been said, which enlarge, or represent a thing bigger, without any degree of comparison ; and these are formed by adding *ázo*, *on*, or *ote*, to the word, as *bómbre*, a man ; *bombrázo*, *bombrón* or *bombróte*, a great lusty man ; *pérro*, a dog ; *perrázo*, *perrón*, or *perrote*, a great large dog.

The nouns numeral, or of number, called cardinals, are as follows :

Uno, one.	Nuéve, nine.
Dos, two.	Diéz, ten.
Tres, three.	'Once, eleven.
Quátro, four.	Dóce, twelve.
Cinco, five.	Tréce, thirteen.
Séis, six.	Catorce, fourteen.
Siete, seven.	Quínce, fifteen.
Ocho, eight.	Diez y seis, sixteen.

Dies

Diez y siéte, <i>seventeen.</i>	Quatrocientos, <i>four hundred.</i>
Diez y ócho, <i>eighteen.</i>	Quiniéntos, <i>five hundred.</i>
Diez y nueve, <i>nineteen.</i>	Seiscientos, <i>six hundred.</i>
Veinte, <i>twenty.</i>	Setecientos, <i>seven hundred.</i>
Veinte y uno, <i>twenty one.</i>	Ochocientos, <i>eight hundred.</i>
Veinte y dos, <i>twenty two.</i>	Nuevecientos } <i>nine hundred.</i>
&c.	or
Tréinta, <i>thirty.</i>	Novecientos, } <i>two thousand.</i>
Quarénta, <i>forty.</i>	Mil, <i>a thousand.</i>
Cincuenta, <i>fifty.</i>	Mil y Quiniéntos, <i>a thousand five hundred.</i>
Sesenta, <i>sixty.</i>	Dos mil, <i>two thousand.</i>
Setenta, <i>seventy.</i>	Tres mil, <i>three thousand,</i>
Ochenta, <i>eighty.</i>	&c.
Noventa, <i>ninety.</i>	Cién mil, <i>an hundred thousand.</i>
Ciénto, <i>a hundred.</i>	Millón, <i>a million.</i>
Cíento y uno, <i>a hundred and one.</i>	
Dociéntos, or <i>Ducientos</i>	
<i>two hundred.</i>	
Trecientos, <i>three hundred.</i>	

N. B. That all these cardinals are undeclined, and of the common gender, except *uno*, *una*, *úno*, in plural *unos*, *únas*, and *cíento*, *dociéntos*, *dociéntas*. *Úno* masculine (in the singular only) when it comes before a noun loses *o*, as *un libró*, a book; *un soldado*, a soldier. *Ciento* likewise loses *o* when before a noun, either masculine, or feminine, as *cién soldados*, hundred soldiers; *cién mugéres*, hundred women: but when another number follows it with a conjunction between, then it retains *o*, as *cíento y uno*, *cíento y dos*, &c. When *cíento* has *un* before, then it is made substantive, and governs a genitive, as *un ciento de caballos*, or *un centenár de caballos*, an hundred of horse.

All the numbers from *ciento* to *mil*, are masculine, and may be made feminine, changing *os* in *as*, as *duciéntos*, *ducentás*, *mil* is undeclined, and of the common gender, but *millón*, a million, is

is masculine and declined, as, *un millón*, *dos millones*.

The ordinals which declare the order of time, or place, are

Primero, first.

Segundo, second.

Tercero, third.

Quarto, fourth.

Quinto, fifth.

Sexto, sixth.

Séptimo, seventh.

Octavo, eighth.

Nono, or Noveno, ninth.

Décimo, or Deceno, tenth.

Undécimo, or Onceno, eleventh.

Duodécimo, or Doceno, twelfth.

Décimotercio, or Treceño, thirteenth.

Décimoquarto, or Catorceño, fourteenth.

Décimoquinto, or Quinceno, fifteenth.

Décimo sexto, sixteenth.

Décimo séptimo, Seventeenth.

Décimo octavo, eighteenth.

Décimo nono, nineteenth.

Vigésimo, or Veinteno, twentieth.

Trigésimo, or Treinteno, thirtieth.

Quadragésimo, or Cuarenteno, fortieth.

Quinquagésimo, or Cinquuenteno, fiftieth.

Sexagésimo, or Sesenteno, sixtieth.

Septuagésimo, or Setenteno, seventieth.

Octuagésimo, or Ochenteno, eightieth.

Nonagésimo, or Noventeno, ninetieth.

Centésimo, Cienteno, or Centeno, hundredth.

Docientésimo, or Docienteno, two hundredth.

Trecentésimo, or Trecenteno, three hundredth.

Quattrocentésimo, or Quattrocienteno, four hundredth.

Quingentésimo, or Quinienteno, five hundredth, &c.

Milésimo, thousandth.

Note, that the Spaniards make use of the ordinals and cardinals promiscuously, as en el año de mil seiscientos y ócho, for en el año milésimo seiscientos y octavo : el año quince, for décimo quinto ; ciénto y setenta.

setenta y siéte, for centésimo septuagésimo séptimo, this must be understood only in the computation of years, chapters, &c. the ordinals are masculine, and by changing *o* in *a* are feminine, as *primero, primera.*

The nouns numeral called distributives, or of order, are

De uno en uno, one by one.

De dos en dos, by two and two.

De tres entre, by three and three.

De quátro en quátro, by four and four.

De cinco en cinco, by five and five, &c.

as *los Fráiles van de dos en dos fuéra del convento,* the Fryars when they go out of the convent they go by two and two.

Note, that when the letter *a* is put between the two cardinals as *uno à uno*, then *à* stand instead of *contra*, against ; as *dos à dos*, two to or against two : the same is in these, *tántos à tántos*, so many against so many, as *riñámos quátro à quátro*, or *tántos à tántos*, let us fight four to four, or so many against so many, that is even or equal in number.

Of ADJECTIVES.

TH E termination of Spanish adjectives is for the most part in *e*, or *o*, as *grande*, large ; *dulce*, sweet ; *bréve*, short ; *bueno*, good ; *santo*, holy, &c.

But there are other adjectives also, whose termination is in *l*, as *útil*, useful ; *débil*, weak ; *frágil*, frail ; *fértil*, fruitful ; and others in *z*, as *capáz*, capable ; *rapáz*, ravenous.

Those that terminate in *e*, never vary in any gender ; so in the adjectives, *grande*, great ; *dulce*, sweet ; *terrible*, terrible, we say in the masculine gender,

44 *The RUDIMENTS of*

gender, *hombre grande*, a great man; in the feminine, *mujer grande*, a great woman; and in the neuter, *lo grande*, that which is great.

Those that terminate in *o*, in the feminine gender, change their termination into *a*, as in *bueno*, good, the masculine is, *hombre bueno*, a good man; the feminine, *mujer buena*, a good woman; but the neuter is again in *o*, as *lo bueno*, that which is good.

Such as terminate in *l*, or *z*, never change in any gender.

The adjectives *grande*, great; and *bueno*, good; are often placed before the substantives, and then sometimes they loose the last syllable, as is usual to say, *gran hombre*, a great man; *buén caballo*, a good horse; but the feminine gender, *buena*, is not liable to that abbreviation, because the cutting off the *a*, would make it masculine, and therefore it must always be said, *buena mujer*, a good woman; *buena casa*, a good house.

Santo, when it signifies a saint, has always the last syllable cut off before the proper name, and we say, *San Pedro*, St Peter; *San Andrés*, St Andrew, &c. except only out of this general rule, *Santo Domigno*, *Santo Thomás*, *Santo Toribio*, and any saints names that begin with *Do*, or *To*, because the cutting off the last syllable of *Santo*, before them would sink the sound of the name. In speaking of a female saint, no letter is cut off, but it is pronounced at length, as *Santa Apolónia*, *Santa Margarita*, &c.

The degrees of comparison.

AL L Adjectives have their three degrees of comparison; the positive, which plainly and simply denotes the thing, as *dócto*, learned; *discreto*, discreet, &c.

The comparative either enhances or debases the thing, making a comparison, as *mas dócto*, more learned;

learned ; *ménos dòcto*, less learned ; *mas santo*, more holy ; *ménos santo*, less holy.

The superlative raises the thing to the highest pitch, or debases it to the lowest, as *caballo velocíssimo*, a most fleet horse ; *cára bellissima*, a most beautiful face.

In Spanish there is no comparative degree formed from the positive, as in the Latin, but that defect is supplied, by adding the article *mas*, more, or *ménos*, less, to the positive ; as *claro*, clear ; *mas claro*, clearer, or more clear ; *oscuro*, dark ; *ménos oscuro*, less dark.

The superlative degree is formed when the positive ends in a vowel, by changing that last vowel into *íssimo*, as from *claro*, clear ; make the superlative *claríssimo*, most clear ; or by the adverb *mui*, very ; or by *mucho mas*, saying *mui*, or *mucho mas* *claro* : but if the positive ends in a consonant, add *íssimo*, as from *vil*, base ; *vilíssimo*, most base ; from *capáz*, capable, *capacíssimo*, most capable.

The six following words are an exception from the rules above, in relation to the comparative degree, for their superlatives follow the common rule, where note that in these the comparative quite varies from the positive, as follows.

Bueno, good ; *méjor*, better ; *boníssimo*, or *óptimo*, best of all.

Málo, bad ; *peór*, worse ; *péssimo*, or *malíssimo*, worst of all.

Grande, great ; *mayór*, greater ; *grandíssimo*, or *máximo*, greatest of all.

Pequeno, little ; *ménor*, less ; *pequeñíssimo*, or *minímo*, least of all.

Mucho, much ; *mas*, more ; *muchíssimo*, most of all.

Poco, little ; *ménos*, less ; *poquíssimo*, least of all.

These two are without a positive and comparative,

Acérrimo,

Acérri mo, extraordinary eager, tenacious, &c.
Ubérri mo, extraordinary fruitful.

Of GENDER S.

IT is no easy matter to determine, whether there are as many genders in *Spaniš*, as in the *Latin*, which has five, viz. the masculine, the feminine, the neuter, the common of two, and the common of three. The question arises from the *Spaniš*, having no substantives of the neuter gender, whence it follows that no adjectives can have it, as being only an accident of the other, and there cannot be that in the accident which is not in the subject ; whence it will follow that there can be only three genders, the masculine, the feminine, and the common of two.

But this notion, though supported by many, must needs be erroneous ; for it is plain that when adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are used as substantives, there is a neuter gender, as appears by the three several articles that express them, for *el* is the masculine, *la* the feminine, and *lo* the neuter ; for example, *el hombre*, the man ; *la mugér*, the woman ; and *lo bueno*, that which is good. This is again demonstrable in the articles, *éste caballo*, this horse ; *ésta Burra*, this she ass ; and *ésto*, this thing ; which exactly answer to the *Latin*, *bis*, *bæc*, *boc* : and therefore it is infallible that these three genders must have a being. As to the others, take the following rules.

1. All adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are of the common gender of three, that is, they will admit of three articles, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, by which the three genders are expressed, which is not only to be supposed when they alter their termination, as *bueno*, *buena*, *bueno*, but also when they always retain the same, as *amante*, *prudente*, &c.

2. All

2. All nouns that are under one and the same termination expressing both man and woman, or the male and female of any sort of living creature, are of the common gender of two, as *éste guárda*, this man keeper ; *ésta guárda*, this woman keeper.

3. The epicene under one termination denotes both the male and female of all animals, and yet has only the masculine, or the feminine article, to express both kinds, for which reason the words *máculo*, male ; or *bémbara*, female ; are added to make the distinction, as, *ésta codorniz máculo*, this cock quail ; *éste zorzál bémbara*, this hen thrush.

4. All names signifying the males of any sort of animals, are of the masculine gender, as *Pédro*, Peter ; *hómbre*, a man ; *cónde*, an earl ; *León*, a lion. And all that signify the female of any sort, are of the feminine gender, as *Maria*, Mary ; *mugér*, a woman ; *marquésa*, a marchioness.

Those words are of the doubtful gender, which have sometimes the masculine, and sometimes the feminine prefixed by authors. But for as much as this ambiguity at first proceeded from ignorance, it will be proper for those who understand better, notwithstanding the privilege grounded on custom, to give every word its proper gender. Some words of this sort that occur, are *árte*, *canál*, *colór*, *eclípsis*, *emblema*, *mar*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *tbéma*. These we frequently find used with either of the articles *el*, or *la*, as, *el árte*, or *la árte*, the art ; and yet it ought certainly to be *la*, to denote the feminine, as in the *Latin*, from whence it is derived ; the same may be said of all others which of right should ever follow their original.

Rules to know the gender of nouns.

AL L nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender, as *pláza*, a square, or market ; *rósa*, a rose ; *cása*, a house. The exceptions are *planéta*, a planet ; *cométa*, a comet, or blazing star ; *día*, a day ; *propábta*, a prophet ; *evangélista*, an evangelist ; *poéta*, a poet ; *Calvinista*, a Calvinist ; *Jesuita*, a Jesuit ; also such as are derived from the Greek, as *dóigma*, a dogma, or a received opinion, *probléma*, a problem ; which are masculine, but *embléma*, an emblem, is of doubtless gender.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender, as *diente*, a tooth ; *monte*, a mountain. Except, *fé*, faith ; *fuente*, a fountain ; *llave*, a key ; *lécbe*, milk ; *ménte*, the mind ; *torre*, a tower ; *tróxe*, a granary ; *ánade*, a duck ; *alvayálde*, ceruse ; *áve*, a fowl ; *calle*, a street ; *cárne*, flesh ; *cláve*, a key of an organ ; *corte*, a prince's court ; *corriente*, a current ; *dote*, a dowry ; *espécie*, a species ; *frénte*, the forehead ; *gente*, people ; *muerte*, death ; *nieve*, snow ; *nóche*, night ; *nube*, a cloud ; *náve*, a ship ; *puente*, a bridge ; *pártre*, a part ; *serpiénte*, a serpent ; all which are feminine ; but *corte*, when it signifies cutting, shaping, or contriving, is masculine.

Again, all nouns ending in *re*, that have a mute letter before it, are feminine, as *costúmbre*, custom ; *sángre*, blood, &c. From which general rule are likewise excepted, *cobre*, copper ; *cófre*, a trunk ; *enjambré*, a swarm ; *nómbre*, a name ; and the names of months, *Setiembre*, *Octubre*, *Noviembre*, *Deciembre*, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine, if derived from the Arabick, as *albelí*, a violet, according to *Nebrißensis* ; yet some will have it to be a clove gilliflower ; *albolí*, or *alborí*, a granary ; *zaborí*, one that pretends to see into things that are not transparent,

transparent, as stone-walls, &c. But such words taken from the Greek are feminine, as *éxtasi*, an extasy; *Sintáxi*, Syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are masculine, as *cámpo*, a field; *témplo*, a church; except *máno*, a hand; *náo*, a ship; *pró*, good; for we say, *buéna pro os hágá*, much good may it do you.

Nouns ending in *u* are masculine, as *Espíritu*, the spirit; *ímpetu*, violence.

Nouns ending in *y* are feminine, as *léy*, law; *gréy*, a flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

This is all that can be said of nouns ending in vowels; next follow those that end in consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the feminine gender, as *charidád*, charity; *babilidád*, ability; except *césped*, a turf; *buésped*, an host, or guest; *ardid*, a stratagem; *Adalid*, a leader; *Cenid*, the Zenith; *almud*, a certain measure; *ataud*, a coffin; *laud*, a lute, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *l* are masculine, as *pardál*, a sparrow; *arancél*, a list or roll. The exceptions are *cál*, lime; *sál*, salt; *señál*, a sign, or token; *cárcel*, a prison; *biél*, gall; *miél*, honey; *piél*, the skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are masculine, as *carbón*, cole; *Rabadán*, a chief among shepherds; *almazén*, a storehouse. Except *sién*, the temple of the head; *sartén*, a frying-pan; and all words derived from the Latin termination in *go*, as *imágen*, an image, from *imago*; *márgen*, a margin; from *margo*, &c. Likewise those ending in *ion*, as *región*, a region; *elección*, election; and those ending in *azón*, as *razón*, reason; from which again except, *corazón*, the heart; *tarazón*, a piece; which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *r* are masculine, as *amór*, love; *Alcázar*, a palace; except *segúr*, an axe, *flór*, a flower; *labór*, work; *mugér*, a woman.

Nouns ending in *s* are masculine, as *combés*, the deck of a ship; *Páis*, a country, or landskip. Ex-

cept *miés*, harvest; *Rés*, a head of cattle; *tós*, a cough; and proper names of women, as *Ignés*, *Agnes*.

Nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relóx*, a clock; *carcáx*, a quiver.

Nouns ending in *z*, are for the most part feminine, as *páz*, peace; *niñéz*, childhood; *naríz*, the nose; *bóz*, a sickle; *lúz*, light. Except *agráz*, verjuice; *soláz*, comfort; *antifaz*, a veil, or covering for the face; *almiréz*, a mortar; *dobléz*, a fold, or falsehood; *jaéz*, furniture for a horse; *pez*, a fish; *axedréz*, a chequer, or draught-board; *varníz*, varnish; *tapíz*, a carpet; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting; *albornóz*, a moorish coat; *arráz*, rice; *altramúz*, a lupine; all which are masculine.

To these rules may be added, that all nouns signifying the male, must of course be masculine, as *Dúque*, a Duke; *gállo*, a cock; *león*, a lion; and those denoting a female, must be feminine, as *Condésa*, a Countess; *gallína*, a hen.

It is further to be observed, that whatsoever the termination happens to be, the proper names of rivers are always masculine, as *el Guadiána*, and so of any others, &c.

Of the other accidents belonging to a Noun.

TH E accidents usually belonging to a noun, are its declination, cases, numbers, and articles; but all these particulars must be explained in the following manner.

Of Declensions or Declinations.

NOUNS in Spanish are not declined by altering or varying the termination, or last syllable, as is done in the Latin, but by adding and varying

varying the articles, as they are peculiar to each case.

And if the declensions are known by the variation of the nouns ; it being certain that the *Spaniards* only vary in the plural number : it may be said by deduction that there are five distinct declensions in *Spanish*, as in *Latin* : because the plural numbers end in

As, as *régla*, *réglas*, a rule.

Es, as *pádre*, *pádres*, a father.

Is, as *rubí*, *rubís*, and *rubies*, a ruby.

Os, as *témplo*, *témplos*, a temple or church.

Us, as *tribú*, *tribús*, a tribe.

There are three particles or notes to denote the cases of a Noun, viz. *De* for the genitive and ablative, *à* or *pára* for the dative, and *ò* for the vocative. These particles are called by other authors *Articles*, but without reason, because the *article* is declinable, and the above particles can never be declined.

Of the Cases.

TH E Spaniards have six cases, like other languages, being

Nominative, or that which names the thing, and generally goes before the verb, as *Pédro perdió su cápa*, Peter lost his cloak.

Genitive, or that which shows to whom the thing belongs, or from whom it proceeds, as *éste es el perro de Pédro*, this is the dog of Peter ; *Maria es hija de Josepb*, Mary is Joseph's daughter ; so that this case answers to this question, *whose* or *whereof* ?

Dative, or that which shows the place or person to whom the thing is given, and answereth to this question, *to whom* or *to what* ? as *dí mi espáda à mi bermáno*, I gave my sword to my brother.

Accusative, or that which declares the subject of the verb, and answers to this question *whom or what?* and follows generally the verb, as *ésta mañana recibí éste presente*, this morning I received this present.

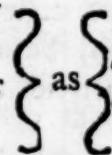
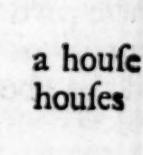
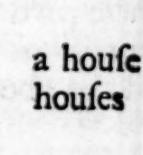
Vocative, is called the case of calling, admiring, or saluting, as *O Pedro ven aquí*, O Peter, pray come here, &c.

Ablative, or that which denotes the place or person from whom the thing is taken, and is generally joined to a preposition, as *procédo de la tierra*, I proceed from the earth.

Of the Numbers.

THE Spaniards like the *Latins*, have two numbers, viz.

Singular, which speaketh of one,
Plural, which speaketh of many,

The singular *Spaniſh*, if end with a vowel is made plural by adding the letter *s* after it, as *hombre*, *hombres*; *témplo*, *templos*; if end with an *i* vowel is made plural by adding *s* or *es*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, or *rubíes*, a ruby; *borceguí*, *borceguís*, or *borceguíes*, but generally in *es*, except *maravedí*, which makes *maravedís*, or *maravedíes*, &c. if the noun end with a consonant in singular, then is made plural by adding *es*, as *dolór*, *dolóres*; *Apóstol*, *Apóstoles*; *páz*, *lúz*; *véz*, *vóz*, change *z* into *c* in plural, as has been observed before, saying *páces*, *lúces*, &c. *x* is not changed into *g* in plural, as some authors wrongfully observe, but is retained, and so from *relóx* say in plural *relóxes*; *carcáx*, *carcáxes*.

Of

Of the Spanish articles.

THERE are three articles in the *Spanish* language, as well as in the *Latin*, and are borrowed of the pronoun, *viz.* *el* for the masculines, *la* for the feminines, and *lo* for the neuters. An article (which is an accident to the Noun, and a necessary one to the modern languages) is a monosyllable, or a diction composed of one syllable, it is declinable, and serves to distinguish the genders. The Spaniards make use of the articles before all the nouns, except the proper names as in the *English* tongue. Note, that the *English* have but one undeclined article, *viz.* *the* for the masculine and feminine, and the particle *it* which often serves for the neuter: so that the *English* make no difference in genders by their article, when they speak of inanimates, except only the word *ship*, which is feminine, and then they make use of the relative *she*, *élla*, saying *she* is a 20 gun *ship*, *élla* es una nave de 20 cañones.

El.

This article is irregular in the plural, and make *los*, and tho' always placed before nouns masculine, as *el hombre*, the man: it is also used before the feminine nouns beginning with *a* (and this only in singular, because in plural we say *las áimas*, *las águas*) as *el agua*, the water; *el alma*, or *áima*, the soul; which is permitted euphonice gratia, for the better sound, to avoid two *a*'s coming together, or the cutting one off, which is little used in *Spanish*; because *la agua*, would sound like *l'agua*, and therefore for the more distinction they say *el agua*, as in *French* they say *mon ame*, tho' *ame* be of the feminine gender, and not *ma ame* or *m'ame*. Yet is not this a general rule, for the most received

custom is to preserve *la* for the words of three or four syllables, as *la antiguedad*, antiquity; *la Académia*, the academy.

El is often put before the verb in the infinitive mood, when followed by another verb, as *el comér en tiempo es bueno*, *como tambien el dormir quando se necesita*, to eat when 'its convenient does good, as it is also to sleep when it is wanted.

When the particles *de* or *a* are joined to *el*, often happens that the Spaniards make one syllable of both, as instead of *de el* or *a el* they say *del* or *al*, as it is said before in the Orthography.

Le in singular, and *les* in plural are often taken as articles by some authors, but without any grounds for so saying; because they never are used before nouns, but only as relatives after verbs in dative or accusative, according to the case governed by the verb, they are likewise used before the verbs, as *dixele esto*, I told him this; *les acompañé*, I accompanied them.

La

Is to be placed before nouns feminine, as *la mugér*, the woman; except those nouns that begin with *a*, as has been said just above: it is likewise used before and after the verb, tho' not as article, but as relative, as *la llamé*, I called her; *llamadla*, call her; the plural of *la* is *las*, and often supplies the noun substantive, as *bésò las de v. m^d.* that is *las manos*.

Lo,

As has been said, is the article of the neuter gender, and only used before adjectives, made substantives or taken in that sense, as *lo grande*, that which is great; *lo bueno*, that which is good, this article has no plural number, sometimes *lo* is taken absolutely,

lutely, as *todo lo que me mandáre v. m^d. haré con gusto*, I will do with pleasure every thing that you will or shall command me. It is used likewise before and after a verb as relative, as *lo dire*, I will say it; *bázlo*, do it.

What has been said of the articles as articles, I think is sufficient for the present, and for the rest I refer the reader to the chapter of Pronouns, and to the Syntax.

The Masculine article is thus declin'd:

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *el*, the
Genitive, *del*, or *de el*, of the
Dative, *à el*, or *al*, or *pára el*, to the
Accusative, *el*, the
Ablative, *del*, or *de el*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *los*, the
Genitive, *de los*, of the
Dative, *à* or *pára los* to the
Accusative, *los*, the
Ablative, *de los*, from the.

The Feminine thus:

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *la*, the
Genitive, *de la*, of the
Dative, *à*, or *pára la*, to the
Accusative, *la*, the
Ablative, *de la*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *las*, the
Genitive, *de las*, of the
Dative, *a las*, to the
Accusative, *las*, the
Ablative, *de las*, from the.

The Neuter article thus:

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *lo*, the
Genitive, *de lo*, of the
Dative, *à*, or *pára lo*, to the
Accusative, *lo*, the
Ablative, *de lo*, from the

It has no Plural Number.

Nor are these articles capable of any vocative, without we say, *O* is general to them all, as, *O bóm̄bre*, *O* man, *O mugér*, *O* woman.

Examples of the Nouns in their several Terminations.

Words end in *a*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hémbra, <i>a Female</i>	Hémbras, <i>Females</i>
Fruta, <i>Fruit</i>	Frutas, <i>Fruits</i>

Words ending in *e*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hombre, <i>a Man</i>	Hombres, <i>Men</i>
Liébre, <i>a Hare</i>	Liébres, <i>Hares</i>

Words ending in *i*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Rubi, <i>a Ruby</i>	Rubís, or Rubíes, <i>Rubies</i>
Javalí, <i>a Wild Boar</i>	Javalís, or Javalíes, <i>Wild Boars</i>

Words ending in *o*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Caballo, <i>a Horse</i>	Cabállos, <i>Horses</i>
Milagro, <i>a Miracle</i>	Milágros, <i>Miracles</i>

Words ending in *u*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Espíritu, <i>a Spirit</i>	Espíritus, <i>Spirits</i>
Tribu, <i>a Tribe</i>	Tribus, <i>Tribes</i>

Words ending in *y*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Réy, <i>a King</i>	Réyes, <i>Kings</i>
Léy, <i>a Law</i>	Léyes, <i>Laws</i>

Words

Words ending in *d*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Verdád, <i>Truth</i>	Verdádes, <i>Truths</i>
Mercéd, <i>a Favour</i>	Mercédes, <i>Favours</i>

Words ending in *l*.

Animál, <i>an Animal</i>	Animáles, <i>Animals</i>
Gentíl, <i>a Pagan</i>	Gentiles, <i>Gentiles</i>

Words ending in *n*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pan, <i>Bread</i>	Pánes, <i>Loaves</i>
Celemin, <i>a Peck</i>	Celemínes, <i>Pecks</i>

Words ending in *r*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pesár, <i>Grief</i>	Pesáres, <i>Sorrows</i>
Dolór, <i>Pain</i>	Dolóres, <i>Pains</i>

Words ending in *s*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Diós, <i>God</i>	Dióses, <i>Gods</i>
Mes, <i>a Month</i>	Méses, <i>Months</i>

Words ending in *x*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Carcáx, <i>a Quiver</i>	Carcáxes, <i>Quivers</i>
Relóx, <i>a Clock</i>	Relóxes, <i>Clocks</i>

Words ending in *z*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Paz, <i>Peace</i>	Páces, <i>Peaces</i>
Juéz, <i>a Judge</i>	Júces, <i>Judges</i> .

*Examples of declining the three several Genders.**Example of the Masculine Gender.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Los Pádres, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> Del Pádre, <i>of the Father</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De los Pádres, <i>of the Fathers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> Al Pádre, <i>or pára el Pádre, to the Father</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A los Pádres, <i>or pára los Pádres, to the Fathers</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Al or El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Los Pádres, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Pádre, <i>O Father</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Pádres, <i>O Fathers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> Del Pádre, <i>from the Father</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De los Pádres, <i>from the (Fathers)</i>

Example of the Feminine Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> La MÁdre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Las MÁdres, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De la MÁdre, <i>of the Mother</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De las MÁdres, <i>of the Mothers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A la MÁdre, <i>to the Mother</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A las MÁdres, <i>to the Mothers</i>
<i>Acc.</i> La MÁdre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Las MÁdres, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O MÁdre, <i>O Mother</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O MÁdres, <i>O Mothers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De la MÁdre, <i>from the Mother</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De las MÁdres, <i>from the (Mothers)</i>

Example of the Neuter Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Lo buéno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De lo buéno, <i>of that which is good</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A lo buéno, <i>to that which is good</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Lo buéno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O bueno, <i>O that which is good</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De lo buéno, <i>from that which is good.</i>

These Adjectives used as Substantives have, as has been said before, no Plural Number.

Common Adjectives are declined as Substantives, according to their Genders, and therefore there needs no Examples of them.

Some

Some observations concerning derived and compound Nouns.

THE Nouns of dignity given to Men, are some of them Substantives, and others Adjectives; the nature of Substantives requires, that they be not given to women, who are possessed of the like dignity, without deriving the Feminine from the Masculine; and thus from *Dúque*, a Duke is deriv'd *Duquésa*, a Duchess; from *Conde*, an Earl, *Condésa*, a Countess; from *Príncipe*, a Prince, *Printésa*, a Princess; because *Príncipe* in Spanish is of the Masculine Gender. But when the Name of Dignity is a Noun Adjective, as *Teniente*, a Lieutenant, or a Deputy; *Affistente*, an Assistant; *Presidente*, a President, it serves both Sexes without any Variation; for in speaking of a President's Lady, she is not to be called *la Presidenta*, but *la Presidente*; and so in the rest of that sort.

They are guilty of the like Error who speaking of a wild, or mountain She-Goat, call her *Cábra monteza*, because the Adjective *Montés* shews both Genders, and therefore the Female is to be called *Montés*, as well as the Male. However the Adjectives that denote Kingdoms, or Nations, ending in *es*, are only applied to the Masculine Gender, and the Feminine has the addition of *a*, as in speaking of a *Frenchman*, or an *Englishman*, he is called *Francés*, or *Inglés*, but a Woman of those Nations is *Francésa*, or *Inglésa*.

C H A P. II.

Of Pronouns.

PRONOUNS are certain words put into the place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving to

to shew, or express the person, or thing before named, without naming it over again.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some of them are called Primitives, as *yó*, I, *tu*, you, *si*, himself, *nos*, or *nosotros*, we; *vos*, or *vosotros*, ye.

Others are Derivatives, or Possessives, because derived from those above, and denoting possession, as *mío*, mine, *túyo*, thine, *súyo*, his, *nuestro*, ours, *vuestro*, yours; with their feminine gender, *mía*, *túya*, *súya*, *nuestra*, *vuestra*. It is to be observ'd, that these pronouns, of the singular number when placed before substantives, always lose their last syllable, and for *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, must be said, *mi*, *tu*, *su*, as *mi Pádre*, my Father; *tu Mámre*, your Mother; *su Avuéllo*, his Grandfather. But when a question is asked, then the answer must be *mío*, *túyo*, or *súyo*, as *cuyo es éste guánie?* whose glove is that? The answer is *mío*, mine, or *túyo*, yours, or *súyo*, his. When they are absolute, or taken as neuter, then they have the article *lo* before, as *lo mío*, that which is mine; *lo túyo*, that which is thine, &c. The same is practised in the feminine gender.

To form the plural number of these pronouns *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, or *mi*, *tu*, *su*, add the Letter *s*, as was before said in the nouns, and you have *míos*, *túyos*, *súyos*, *mis*, *tus*, and *sus*.

There are also demonstrative pronouns, as *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, This; *ése*, *ésa*, *éso*, that; and *el*, *ella*, *élllo*, he, she, that, *éste*, *ésta*, *ése*, *ésa*, and *el* are always placed before nouns, as *éste libro*, this book, *ésa carne*, that flesh; but *ésto*, *éso* and *élllo*, are spoken absolutely, without being joined to any noun; *ésto*, signifying this thing; *éso*, that thing; and *élllo*, the thing.

The particles making the cases in declining, when they come before these pronouns beginning with *e*, are not always contracted, and it may be said *de este*, or *deste*, *de esto*, or *desto*.

The relative pronouns are, *qual*, which, *quién*, who, *qué*, what.

For declining of pronouns, see the following examples.

The pronoun of the first person *Yo* is thus declin'd.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Yo, <i>I</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Nos, or <i>Nosotros</i> , <i>We</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De mi, <i>Of me</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De nos, or de <i>nosotros</i> , <i>Of us</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A mi, <i>To me</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A nos, or a <i>nosotros</i> , <i>To us</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Me, or a mi, <i>Me</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Nos, or <i>nosotros</i> , <i>Us</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De mi, <i>From me</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De nos, or de <i>nosotros</i> , <i>From us</i> .

The second person *Tu* is thus declined:

<i>Nom.</i> Tu, <i>You</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>Ye</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De ti, <i>Of you</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>Of ye</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A ti, <i>To you</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>To ye</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Te, or a ti, <i>You</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>Ye</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De ti, <i>From you</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>From ye</i>

The third person *Si* thus:

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De si, <i>Of himself,</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A si, <i>To himself,</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Se, or a si, <i>Himself,</i>
<i>Ablat.</i> De si, <i>From himself.</i>

And has no plural number, nor feminine gender, unless *mismo* be added to it for the masculine, and then *mísma* must be for the feminine, and then it has *mismos* and *mismas* in the plural.

These pronouns in the singular number serve both the masculine and the feminine genders, as does *nos* and *vos* in the plural; but *nosotros* and *vosotros* are masculine, and the feminine is made by turning the last *o* into *a*, that is, instead of *nosotros* say *nosotras*, and instead of *vosotros* *vosotras*.

The

62 *The RUDIMENTS of*

The Spaniards frequently in speech and writing use this pronoun *nos* with the first person plural of the imperative mood, taking away the *s* from the verb, as *vámonos*, for *vámos nos*, let us go ; *déxémonos*, for *déxemos nos*, let us leave ; and so they do of *vos*, losing the *v*, as *ídos*, let ye go, instead of *íd vos*, or losing *d* in the second person plural, as *amáos*, let ye love, instead of *amádos*, or *amád vos*.

It is proper to observe, that the genitive case of these pronouns, seems to be in a manner superfluous, as never in use ; for if we are to speak by way of possession, we must not say *el libro es de mi*, which would be in *English*, the book is of me, but instead thereof, we must use the word, *mío*, viz. *el libro es mío*, the book is mine. So *el cavállo es de ti*, is not *Spanish*, and would signify, the horse is of you ; but it must be *el cavállo es túyo*, the horse is your's ; and lastly, *el sáyo es de si*, is as false, being the Coat is of him, but it must be, *el sáyo es súyo*, or *de v. m^d. the coat is his*. And if the question be asked, *cuya obra es ésta?* whose work is this ? the answer must be, *mía*, mine, or *túya*, yours, or *súya*, his.

These pronouns serve after a verb, which is then rather in the ablative, than the genitive case, as *que se dirá de mi ?* what will be said of me ? *que será de ti ?* what will become of you ? *el bábla de si*, he talks of himself.

The possessives *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, mine, thine, his, and *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, your, his, as also, *nuestro*, and *vuestro*, need not be declined here, all of them following the same rule, without any variation.

The three pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *el*, are used in composition with the word *mísmo*, signifying itself, as *yo mísmo*, I myself, *tu mísmo*, you yourself, *el mísmo*, he himself ; where it is to be noted that *el mísmo*, also signifies the same, but then *el* is the article *the*. These three are declined as before, only that the *mísmo* has a singular and a plural number, and therefore

therefore we must say, *yo mismo*, *tu mismo*, and *el mismo*, in the singular, and *nosotros mismos*, *vosotros mismos*, and *ellos mismos*, in the plural; and so *mismo* and *mismos* for the masculine gender, and *mísma* and *mismas* for the feminine.

The pronouns possessive are *Mío*, *Tuyo*, *Suyo*, *Nuestro*, *Vuestro*, and the feminine gender of them *Mía*, *Tuya*, *Suya*, *Nuestra*, *Vuestra*; but if placed before the substantive, then it must be *Mi*, *Tu*, *Su*, and in the plural *Mis*, *Tus*, *Sus*. It is proper also here to speak of the pronoun of interrogation, *Cuyo*, in the masculine, and *Cuya*, in the feminine gender, and *Cuyos* and *Cuyas*, in the plural number, which always denotes the genitive. To explain the proper use of these words, take these examples: Asking the question, *Cuyo es éste caballo?* that is *de quien es éste caballo?* Whose Horse is this? The answer is, *Mío*, mine, *Tuyo*, yours, *Suyo*, his; and so in the feminine gender, only changing the *o* into *a*, as *cuya*, *mía*, &c. and in the plural number adding *s*, as *cuyos* or *cuyas*, &c.

Note, That *Cuyo* is likewise relative, as *el Rey*, *en cuya Máno está el bacér bien*, &c. the King in whose Hand or Power is, to do good, &c. *éste réo*, *cuyos delitos son grandes*, &c. This guilty person whose crimes are great, &c.

The Demonstratives Éste, Ésse, Aquél, El.

E'STE, This, as *éste Hombre*, this Man, *éste Caballo*, that Horse; *aquél* is also *that*, but yet with this difference, that *éste* signifies *that* which is near to the person who is spoken to, whereas *aquél* denotes *that* which is neither near him who is spoken to, nor him who speaketh.

These

These pronouns are thus declined :

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Nom.	éste	ésta	ésto	This
Gen.	déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta	désto, or de ésto	Of this
Dat.	a éste	a ésta	a ésto	To this
Acc.	éste, or a éste	esta, or a ésta	esto, or a ésto	This
Abl.	déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta	désto, or de ésto.	From this

Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neut.	
Nom.	éstos	éstas		These
Gen.	déstos, or de éstos	déstas, or de éstas		Of these
Dat.	a éstos	a éstas		To these
Acc.	éstos, or a éstos	éstas, or a éstas		These
Abl.	déstos, or de éstos	déstas, or de éstas.		From these

**Eſſe*, *éſſa*, *éſſo*, is declined in the same manner, the plural number being *éſſos*, *éſſas*. The like of *Aquél*, *Aquélla*, *Aquéllos*, *Aquéllas*.

So is *el*, *he*, *élla*, *she*, *é́llo*, *the* or *that* thing, *é́llos*, *they*, masculine, *ellas*, *they*, feminine. There is no neuter plural. The cases need not to be repeated, being the same as those before. The word *ótro*, is often joined to *éſſe*, or *éſſa*, as *Eſſótro*, or *Eſſeótro*, the other Man or Thing ; *Eſſótra*, or *Eſſaótra*, the other Woman.

There are two other pronouns, which have only a plural number, as signifying two, which are *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *'Ambos a dos*, both together, and *Entrámbos*, imports much the same. Note, that of *éste*, and *éſſe*, is made *aquéſte*, *aquéſſe*, *this* or *that* very Man. And so in the feminine and neuter gender.

The relatives, *Quién*, *Que*, *Qual*.

QUIÉN, is either interrogative, or relative, as *Quién lo dice?* Who says it? *No báй quién lo fúbra*, no Man can endure it.

Qué, is also interrogative, and relative, as *Qué es ésto?* What is that? *El bóm̄bre que yo digo*, The Man I speak of.

Qual, signifies Which, as *Qual déllos?* which of them? To this is sometimes added *el*, for the masculine, *la* for the feminine, and *lo* for the neuter, as *el qual*, *la qual*, *lo qual*.

The declining of these consisting only in the addition of the articles, it is needless to run the same over again; only it must be observed, that *Que* has no plural number, as signifying What, which is incapable of it; and yet *Quién* and *Qual*, though they signify *Who*, and *Which*, have a plural, which is *Quiénes*, and *Quáles*, as *Quiénes son aquéllos?* Who are those? and *Quáles son los que dices?* What sort of people are those you speak of, or what are they?

El, is frequently joined to *Qual*, which we cannot so properly express in *English*, as signifying *Who*; but *lo qual*, is expressed, the which, these two conjoined are declined as follows?

Sing. <i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <i>El qual</i>	<i>la qual</i>	<i>lo qual</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>del qual</i>	<i>de la qual</i>	<i>de lo qual</i>
<i>Dat.</i> <i>al qual</i>	<i>a la qual</i>	<i>a lo qual</i>
<i>Acc.</i> <i>el qual, or al qual</i>	<i>la qual, or a la qual</i>	<i>lo qual, or a lo qual</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <i>del qual</i>	<i>de la qual</i>	<i>de lo qual</i>

Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neuter.
<i>Nom.</i>	los quáles	las quáles	
<i>Gen.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles,	
<i>Dat.</i>	a los quáles	a las quáles	
<i>Acc.</i>	los quáles, or (a los quáles)	las quáles, or a las (quáles)	
<i>Abl.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles	

When the word *Quiéra*, is added to *Quién*, or *Qual*, it quite alters the meaning, so *Quienquierá* signifies any person, or man whatsoever; and *Qualquierá*, is any one, whether man, or woman, or other thing. When *que* is added to *tal* thus, *que tal*, then stands for *quál* in Spanish.

Of the Reciprocals, or Relatives, me, te, se.

THESE three are only of the dative and accusative Cases, and have always a verb either before, or after them, as *Díme quién éres?* Tell me who you are? *Dóite el Parabién?* I give you Joy. *Fuése de aquí*, He went away from hence. They are also placed before verbs, as, *Pédro me dixo*, Peter told me. *Juán te dará*, John will give you. *El se alába*. He praises himself. Many other examples might be brought wherein these pronouns are variously used; but those things are better learnt by practice, than set down as rules.

Mi, ti, si, before spoken of as genitive Cases, the first two of *yo*, and *tu*, and the third without a proper nominative, are often join'd to the word *con*, with, and the syllable *go*, added to it, thus *Conmigo*, with me; *Contigo*, with you; *Consigo*, with himself. They have no variation for the genders, but serve both the masculine, and the feminine.

Note, That *proprio* stands often for *mísmo*, as *yo proprio*, or *yo mísmo*, *tu proprio*, &c.

The possessive *su*, and in plural *sus*, stands for his, her's, their, &c. as *el Rey con su Hijo el Príncipe*, the King with his Son the Prince; *la Reina con su hija la Princesa*, the Queen with her Daughter the Princess.

Los subditos deben obedecer, y pagár tributo à su Rey, the Subjects ought to obey, and pay tribute to their King.

El General comió con sus oficiales subalternos, the General dinned with his subaltern Officers.

Su stands also for *el*, or *la*, as *el hombre tiene su-sér (el ser) de Dios*, Man has the being from God. *Su firma del capitán*, *su* for *la*; but to speak properly, read always *el sér*, the being; *la firma*, the sign, or one's name.

Add to these

The imperfect Pronouns, or properly these Nouns relatives: *Cierto*, certain; *úno*, one; *algún*, *alguien*, somebody, or *algo* in neuter, something; *cadaúno*, each, every body; *nádie*, no body (these two last mentioned have no plural) *otro*, other; *sólo*, alone; *todo*, all; *tal*, such; *tanto*, so much; *quanto*, how much. And the two *punique* words *fuláno* and *zutáno*, such a one. Note, That these are called by *Salv. Náves*, pronouns indefinites.

There are three persons in the Pronouns, viz.

Sing.

1. *Yo, I*
2. *Tu, Thou*
3. *El, or aquél, he*

Plur.

- nos, or nosótros, we*
vos, or vosótros, ye
élllos, or aquéllos; they

C H A P. III.

Of VERBS.

A Verb is a part of speech, that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer, as *ser hombre*, to be a Man; *ámo*, I love; *soí amado*, I am loved: Is conjugated through Moods and Tenses; by Moods the Verb is changed according to the circumstances, as *yo báblo*, I speak, is the indicative; *bábla tu*, speak thou, the imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variety of times, as *venía*, I was coming; *vine*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into personals, (so called because they have persons) as *yo ámo*, I love; *tu ámas*, thou lovest, &c. and impersonals, (because without persons) as *conviene*, it behoveth, *consta* it is plain.

The personals are subdivided into

Active		Neuter
Passive		Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do, as *enseñár*, to teach; *leér*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliari Verb *ser*, and the participle passive of the Verb, as *ser enseñado*, *soí enseñado*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer, as *soí amado*. But note, That in the third person singular, and the third of the plural are conjugated not only with the auxiliar *ser*, but even with the particle *se*, as *Diós es amado*, or *Diós se áma*, God is beloved. *Bueno es que la virtud séa ballada*, or *se bálle en un Príncipe*, it is good that Virtue be found in a Prince. *Que los Buénos séan amados*, or *se ámen*, that the virtuous

virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the participle Passive is varied in the conjugation of this Verb, saying, *Yo soí amado, nosóiros sómos amados.*

Neuter properly is that which signifies neither action nor passion, as *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run, *assentir*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the active, as *duérmo*, I sleep, *niéva*, it snows.

The verb *Active* says the same thing in the active and passive voices, as *yo amo à diós*, or *dios es amado de mí*, which can't be said by the Neuter in a proper manner.

The Neuter is either substantive, as *ser*, to be; or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, *llueve*, it rains; or by passion, as *coloreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The verb reciprocal is that which return the sense backward, and is conjugated thus, *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for, *me apercíbo*, I prepare myself, *te apercíbes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the particle *se* in the infinitive.

Note, That in the Spanish language, one Verb may be made *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, and *reciprocal* by the different senses that it may be applied to it, as *acostár*, to put one in it's bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb *auxiliár estár*, and the participle passive, as *estoi acostádo*, I am put in my bed, or I lay down. When it signifies to follow one's party, or opinion, or to declare himself partial for a Prince, is *Neuter*, as *Pédro, dexádo el servicio de Fráncia, por proméssas de adelantamiento acostó à la parte de Espáña*. Peter having left the French service, by the promises he had on his being promoted, enlisted himself in the Spanish service. And when it signifies to come near to a place, as *acostarse aquí*, to come near to this place, then is *reciprocal*, as *si te acuéssas aquí*,

70 *The RUDIMENT S of*
aqui, te mataré, if you come near to this place, I
will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular, (so called for their being confined to rules) and others irregular (so called, because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various some time in the present tense of the indicative, in the preterperfect, future, in the imperative, preter imperfect and future of the optative, and otherwise in their participles, I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

Of Conjugations.

TH E R E are three Conjugations in the *Spanish Tongue*, viz.

- 1. in *ár* } as *Amár*, to love
- 2. in *ér* } as *Responder*, to answer
- 3. in *ir* } as *Venir*, to come.

So that the *Spanish* Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their infinitives.

Of Moods.

TH E Moods are six, as in *Latin*, viz. The *Indicative*, or that which shows, or declares; the *Imperative*, or that which commands; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

Of Tenses.

TH E Tenses, which are the times of action, or passion, are three properly, being the present, the past, and the time to come: And with those

those made by circumlocution are ten in the indicative Mood, *viz.* the present, preterimperfect, three preterperfects, the plus perfect, and four futures: And in the optative Mood there are nine, *viz.* the present, three preterimperfects, preterperfect, two preter plus perfects, and two futures.

Of the Indicative Mood.

THE Present Tense of all Conjugations of regular verbs, is formed by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* of the infinitive into *o*, as from *amár* say *ámo*, from *leér*, *léo*, from *cumplir*, *cúmplo*; this tense extends itself to a future time, as *mañána es dia de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holy day.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába*, as *amába*, I did love, or properly I was loving; and of the second and third Conjugation, is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*, as *perdía*, *pedía*.

Note, That this Tense has two ways of explaining the second person plural through all Conjugations, as *amábadeis* or *amábais*; *perdiádeis* or *perdíais*; *pediadéis* or *pedíais*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation by changing *ár* into *é*, as *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perdér*, *perdí*, *pedír*, *pedí*. This tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed; as *el mes pasado hablé con él*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the auxiliar verb *bavér*, and the participle passive of the verb treated of, as *bé bablado*, I have spoken, *bé perdido*, I have lost; *be pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as *búve bablado*, &c. but not so frequently used in Spanish as the other two.

Note, That these two latter are called Preterperfects indefinites, for their time is not determined, as *le be hablado*, I have spoken to him, but we don't say when.

So that the difference between the first preterperfect and the others, is that the former should express time, and the latter not ; besides, that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past) you may say, *le hablé dos años ba*, I spoke to him two years ago ; but you can't say *le be hablado dos años bá*, I have spoken to him two years ago ; because *be hablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valéra's* Observations, which I advise the Reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent Equivocations that often happens in speaking and writing.

The Preterplusperfect thus : *había hablado*, *había perdido*, *había pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the infinitive, adding *é* after *r*, as of *bablar*, adding *e* say *bablaré* ; *perder*, *perderé* ; *pedir*, *pediré*, having always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the auxiliary *bé*, *tengo*, or *débo*, and the infinitive Mood with *de* before it, as *be* or *tengo de dár*, I am to give, *débo de dar*, or *débo dár*, I am oblig'd, I must give.

The third thus : *Havré de bablár*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preterplusperfect) thus : *Había de bablár*, I had, or I was to speak, &c.

Of the Imperative.

THE Imperative is made of the third person of the present of the indicative Mood, and of the present of the optative, as *áma tu*, love thou ; *áme*

áme aquél, let him love ; pierde tu, loose thou ; pierda el, let him loose, &c.

So that the third person of the indicative is the second of the imperative, and the third of the imperative is the first of the optative. The second plural is formed from the infinitive by changing *r* into *d*, of *amár* say *amád*, let ye love ; *perdér*, *perdéd* ; *pedir*, *pedid* ; and often the *d* is lost, saying *amaos* for *amád vos*, or *amád os*, and sometimes is transposed after *l*, as *amálos*, *amáles* for *amádlos*, or *amádles* ; and so it is often said *decilde* for *decide*.

Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.

OPTATIVE, or that wishes, or desires, has always annexed an adverb, as *óxala*, *ò si*, *pluguiese à Diós*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant ; *aunque*, *no obstante que*, *sin embargo que*, altho', notwithstanding.

Potential properly has no signs in Spanish, but in English has these, *can*, *may*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*, which are equal to these Spanish expressions, *puede ser que*, *es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

Subjunctive has always some conjunction annexed, as *si*, *cómo*, *que*, *quando* : *if*, *as*, *that*, *when*, as *como yo áme*, as I may love ; but the tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The present of the Optative is formed by the present of the Indicative changing *o* into *e* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third conjugations, as from *ámo* say *áme* ; *pírdo*, *pírda* ; *pído*, *pída*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the first preterperfect of the Indicative, as from *amé* in the first conjugation changing *e* into *ára* or *ásse* is made *amára*, *amásse* ; in the second and third conjugations add to the preterperfect

terperfect éra or ésse, as from *perdí* say *perdiéra*, *perdiéffe*, from *pedí* say *pidiéra*, *pidiéffe*.

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the infinitive, adding ía, as from *amár* say *amaría*, from *leér*, *leeriá*, from *pedir*, *pidiriá*.

Observe here, That these tenses have two ways to explain the second person plural, as *amarádeis* or *amárais*, *amássedeis*, or *amásseis*, *amariádeis*, or *amariáais*, and so in the other two conjugations.

Observe likewise, That these three tenses vary one from another, speaking in a right method; tho' there is such a confusion in explaining them, that hardly there is any difference made by the Spaniards. Some Authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amásse*, to the Subjunctive, and *amaría* to the Potential; as *oxala yo amára la virtud*, God grant that I might love virtue; *como yo amásse a Diós*, *el me amaria*, as I could love God, he would love me.

Other Authors, as *Tominque*, *Cessér* in Gram. Rud. and *Villalba*, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the disposition of a thing, or the readiness for an action; *amásse* the beginning of it, and *amaría* the possibility to obtain it; or as *Terebio*, says the first imperfect is a tense of motion, *exquo* from whence, and related to the medium, as *de los veinte pesos le diéra diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight I would give him ten, that he might buy himself a suit of cloaths; the second a tense medium, or *inquo*, as *como le ballasse baciendo loque le dixe*, as I should find him in doing what I told him. And the third a conditional tense, as *si lo baría*, *como el fuéra bueno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidst all these, that *aunque*, *como*, *oxala*, &c. follow the two first preterimperfects, and the third imperfect tense is used by way of interrogation, or suspension, saying: *baría*

baría v. m^a esto? Would you do this? O que bien lo baria yo! O that I could do it well! or with *si*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the auxiliar verb *bavér*, and the participle passive thus; *báya amado*, *baya perdido*, *báya pedido*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Plusperfect thus: *Huviera amado*, when I had loved.

The second, *buvieffe amado*, when I had loved.

1. Future is made of the first Preterimperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, as *amára*, *amáre*; *perdiéra*, *perdiére*; *pidiéra*, *pidiére*, with the same accent on all the syllables.

2. Future of the first Plusperfect by changing *ra* into *re*, and participle passive, as from *búviéra amado*, say in the future *búviére amado*. So that there are nine tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

INFINITIVE signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be; and hath neither number, nor person, nor nominative Case before as *amár*, to love; *perdér*, to loose; *pedir*, to ask, to beg.

When two Verbs come together without any nominative Case between them, then the latter shall be in the infinitive Mood, as *deseo aprender*, I desire to learn: And often times the infinitive supplies the nominative case, as *amár à Diós*, *y bacer bien al Próximo*, *son los dos actos Principales de un Christiano*, to love God, and do good to the Neighbour, are the two principal Actions of a Christian.

When *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, are added to the infinitive, then *r* is often changed into *l*, as *amálle* for *amárle*, *perdálle* for *perderle*, *decílle* for *decírle*, to love him, to loose him, to tell him. And when *me*, *te*, *se*, *nos*, *os*, &c. follow the infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables, as *decírlle*, *decírselo*, &c.

76 *The RUDIMENTS of*
A general Scheme of the Termination of Verbs of the
three Conjugations in their simple Tenses.

Singular.			Plural.		
Persons	<i>yo, tu, el</i>		<i>nosotros, vosotros</i>		<i>ellos,</i>
I,	thou,	he	we	ye	they
do	doſt	doſt	do	do	do.
1. { o	as	a	ámos	áis	an
2. { o	es	e	émos	éis	en
3. {			ímos	is	en
	did	didſt	did	did	did
pref. te.	1. ába	ábas	ábaſos	abádeis	ában
	2. ía	ías	íamos	íadeis	ían
	3. bave	bavſt	bave	bave	bave
Indicative Mood.	Imp.	1. é	áſte	ámoſ	áſteis
	2. í	íſte	ímoſ	íſteis	éron
	<i>shall or will have</i>				
	future.	1. ré	rás	rémoſ	réis
		2. 3.	rá		rán
Imper.	<i>do thou,</i>	<i>let him do,</i>	<i>let us,</i>	<i>let ye,</i>	<i>let them</i>
	<i>a tu,</i>	<i>c el</i>	<i>emos</i>	<i>ad vosotros</i>	<i>en ellos</i>
1. {	c	a	ámos	éd	an
2. {	c	a	ámos	íd	an
3. {					
	<i>may mayſt may</i>				
	<i>or can</i>				
	pref. te.	1. e	es	émoſ	éis
		2. { a	as	ámoſ	áis
		3.			
	<i>might mightſt might</i>		<i>might</i>	<i>might</i>	<i>might</i>
	<i>or could</i>				
Potential Mood.	imperf.	1. { ára	áras	áramoſ	áradeis-árais
		áſſe	áſſes	áſſeſmoſ	áſſedeis-áſſeis
	2. {	ária	arias	ariamoſ	ariades-ariais
		éra	éras	éramoſ	érades-érais
		éſſe	éſſes	éſſeſmoſ	éſſedeis-éſſeis
	3. {	ría	rias	riamoſ	riadeis-ríais
	<i>shall shall shall</i>		<i>shall</i>	<i>shall</i>	<i>shall</i>
	<i>or will have</i>				
	future	1. áre	áres	áremoſ	áredeis-áreis
		2. { ére	éres	éremoſ	éredeis-éreis
		3.			

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Pref. Ten.	1. ár and 2. ér	to have	Gerun.	ándo éndo iéndo	having	par.	ádo ído ído	had.
Pret. imp.	3. ír							

The Termination of Verbs of the three Conjugations in their compound Tenses.

	Singular.			Plural.		
Persons	yo	tu	el	nos.	vos.	ellas
	I, thou, he			we,	ye,	they,
	<i>I have, &c.</i>					
2. pre. per.	1. hé, hás,	2. ha	3. ha	hémos or havéis, han		
	{			havémos	{	ádo
						2. ído
						3. ído
	<i>I have, &c.</i>					
3. perf.	1. húve,	2. húviste,	3. húvo	huvímos, huvísteis	{	ádo
	{			huvieron		z. ído
						3. ído
	<i>I had, &c.</i>					
plusper.	1. havía,	2. havías,	3. havía	havíamos, { havíadeis,	{	ádo
	{			havíais		z. ído
				havían	{	3. ído
	<i>I am to</i>					
2. futu.	1. he or tengo	2. has, há de	3. ir	hemos, havéis, han de	{	ár
	{					ér
						ir
	<i>I must, or shall be obliged to</i>					
3. futu.	1. havré,	2. havras,	3. havrá de	havrémos, havréis,	{	ár
	{			havrán de		ér
						ir
	<i>I had, or I was to</i>					
4. futu.	1. havía,	2. havías,	3. havía de	haviámos, { havíadeis,	{	ár
	{			havíais,		ér
				havían de	{	ir

Persons

Persons	<i>yo tu él</i> I, thou, he <i>might or could have, &c.</i>	<i>nosotros, vosotros, ellos</i> we, ye, they
Pre. per.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{háya,} \\ \text{háyas,} \\ \text{háya} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>I bad, &c.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{hayámos,} \\ \text{hayádeis} \\ \text{hayáis} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>hayán</i>
1. pl. per.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{huviéra,} \\ \text{huvieras} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>I bad, &c.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{huviéramos,} \\ \text{adeís,} \\ \text{ais} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>éran</i>
Potential Mood.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{huviéssle,} \\ \text{éssles} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>shall or will</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{huviésslemos,} \\ \text{edeís,} \\ \text{eis} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>ésslen</i>
2. futur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{huviére,} \\ \text{éres,} \\ \text{ére} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>shall or will</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{huviéremos,} \\ \text{edeís,} \\ \text{eis} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$ <i>éren.</i>

Infinitive.

Pret. perf.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{havér} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ and	<i>to have, &c.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{havi-} \\ \text{endo} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ <i>having.</i>
Plusperf.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 2. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{havér de} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ar} \\ \text{3. } \end{array}$	<i>to have hereafter</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ges-} \\ \text{orha-} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ <i>having.</i>
Future	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{havér de} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ar} \\ \text{2. } \end{array}$ <i>to have hereafter</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{er} \\ \text{ir} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ <i>er ir</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Gefun-} \\ \text{dungs} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ <i>having.</i>
Supine	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1. \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{à} \end{array} \right\} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ár} \\ \text{2. } \end{array}$ <i>to have</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ér} \\ \text{ir} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ <i>er ir</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{de} \\ \text{do} \end{array} \right. \begin{array}{l} \text{ádo} \\ \text{2. ido} \end{array}$ <i>er ir</i>

Observations on the Verbs.

THE regular and irregular Verbs, generally speaking, agree in this, that the first Futures of the Indicative Mood, and that of the Optative are always the same through out all the Conjugations, with this difference, that the first has the accent on the last syllable, and the second in the *ante penultima*.

When

When the first Preterperfect of the indicative is irregular, the first and second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

dár, to give ;	tenér, to have, or hold,	deir, to say.
Pret. Perf.	Pret. imperf. opt.	Future.
di, I give	diéra, or diéssle,	diére, when I shall give.
	I might give.	
túve, I had	tu viéra, or tu viéssle,	tu viére, when I shall have.
	that I might have.	
dixe, I said	dixéra, or dixéssle	dixére, when I shall say.
	that I might say.	

The third Preterimperfect of the Optative is always the same, and ends in *ría*, as *daría*, *tendría*, *diría* for *deciría*.

Note, Likewise, that generally the third person singular of the present tense of the Indicative Mood, is the second person of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the first of the Optative, as *aquel áma*, he loveth; *áma tu*, love thou; *áme aquel*, let him love; *que yo áme*, that I may love.

There are few exceptions in the Imperative, as from *poner*, *tenér*, *bacér*, *decír*, &c. say *pon tu* instead of *pone tu*, *ten tu* for *tiéne tu*, *báz* for *bate*, but this is in use, *dí tu*, or *dice tu*, &c.

Of the Participle.

A Participle is a part of a speech, it comes from the verb, and participates its force, that is, has the same signification, and governs the cause of the verb ; it taketh of a Noun the gender, case, and declension ; and of both, number and figure.

In Spanish there are four Participles, as in Latin,
viz. of the

N. B. That this Participle is likewise supplied in the *Spaniſh* language by the third person of the present tense of the indicative Mood, the relative *el* and *que*, as *el que áma*, he who does love; it governs generally in *Spaniſh* a genitive, as *amante de Dios*; and is of the gender of common of three, as *el amante, la amante, lo amante*.

	Latin		Spaniſh
Of the pret.	$\begin{cases} \text{tus} & \text{amatus} \\ \text{or} & \text{in } \begin{cases} \text{sus} & \text{visus} \\ \text{xus} & \text{connexus} \end{cases} \\ \text{Passive} & \end{cases}$		$\begin{cases} \text{do} & \text{amado, loved,} \\ \text{in to} & \text{ visto, seen,} \\ \text{xo, &c.} & \text{connéxo, &c.} \\ \text{join'd or added.} & \end{cases}$
	Latin		Spaniſh
Of the future	$\begin{cases} \text{rus} & \text{futurus} \\ \text{in} & \text{venturus} \end{cases}$		$\begin{cases} \text{uro} & \text{futuro} \\ \text{in éro, as} & \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{venturo} \\ \text{&c.} \end{array} \right. \\ \text{&c.} & \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{is to} \\ \text{venidéro, &c.} \end{array} \right. \end{cases}$

Note, That this Participle is supplied in *Spaniſh* by the auxiliar verb *bavér*, or by *tenér*, with the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the verb, as *amaturus fueram, bavia de amár*, I had to love; *tengo, or he de amár*, I am to love, &c.

Of Fut. in $\begin{cases} \text{dus} & \text{as Amandus : But this in Spaniſh is supplied} \\ \text{by the auxiliar Verbs bavér and sér, the particle de,} \\ \text{and the participle of the preter of the Verb, as} \\ \text{Amandus est, bá de sér amado, he is to be loved,} \\ \text{&c.} \end{cases}$

Gerunds.

The Gerunds are terminated in *Spaniſh* in $\begin{cases} \text{ando} & \text{amando, loving,} \\ \text{endo} & \text{oyéndo, bearing,} \end{cases}$

And govern the case of the Verb, as *amando a Dios*, loving God: The Gerund of genitive is formed of the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the Verb thus, *de amar*, of loving; and that of accusative thus, *à amar*, to love.

Supines.

SUPINES.

THREE are two Supines in Spanish, by way of circumlocution, one active, as *à amár*, to love; the other passive, as *à ser amado*, to be loved.

This, it is hoped, will be sufficient to bring the Reader into the knowledge of every thing required for the conjugation of verbs; as for the rest, we refer him to the third part of this Grammar, where under their proper heads he will find every thing necessary for the construction.

PERSONS.

THREE are also in Verbs three Persons in both numbers, *viz.*

Sing. yo *I* yo ámo, *I love*
 tu, *thou*, as { tu ámas, *thou lovest*
 el, or aquél *he* el áma, *he loveth*.

Plur. nos, or nosótros, *we* nosótros amámos, *we love*
 vos, or vosótros, *ye* as { vosótros amáis, *ye love*
 ellos, or aquéllos, *they* ellos aman, *they love*.

By the first person, we note, he who speaks; by the second, to whom we speak; and by the third, the person of whom we speak.

N. B. That the Spaniards very seldom make use of the second Person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends; when they speak to God, wife and husband to themselves, to children, or servants; instead thereof, when they speak to others, they make use of *Usted* in singular, or *Ustedes* in plural, or of *Vuestra Mercéd*, and *Vuestras Mercedes*, *you*, your Worship, your Merits, or Deservings; which are signs of the third person, of which they make use of in speaking: In writing they do always make use of

Vuestra Merced, thus *v. m^d.* in singular, or *v. m^{ds}.* in plural.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *Vuestra Merced*, it does not agree in the gender with *v. m^d.*, but with the person to whom we speak, or spoke of ; when to a Man, thus *Vuestra Merced sea bien venido*, you are welcome : when to a Woman, thus, *Vuestra Merced sea bien venida*, you are welcome, and so in the plural. It can't be amiss, if at present I take notice of

The manner used by the Spaniards in saluting or complimenting one another.

TH E Y make use of *Usted*, or *Vuestra Merced* in general for persons, or among persons below those of the Nobility and Gentry, as *como está v. m^d.*? or *como le va a v. m^d.*? or *como se bálle v. m^d.*? or as newly introduced by strangers, *como se porta v. m^d.*? how do you do, &c. Answer, *Mui bien pára servirle*, (or *pára servir a v. m^d.*) or *Bueno* (that is *ensalud*) *para que me mánde*, &c. *Caballero buenos días* (that is, *éste y otros mas*) *tenga v. m^d.*, Good morrow, Sir ; *Buenas noches tenga v. m^d.*, Good Night to you, Sir ; it is used in Spanish *buen día tenga v. m^d.*, but not *Buena noche* in singular.

Beso las Mános de v. m^d., I kiss your Hands ; answer, *Y yo las (sup. Mános) de v. m^d.*

For *v. m^d. me ága* (or *ágame*) *la Mercéd*, or *favór de ésto*, they say generally *v. m^d. me la* (viz. *Mercéd*) *ága de ésto*, do me the Favour of this, or grant me the favour, &c.

We use to say *Buen día*, or *buenos días dé Dios à v. m^d.*, God give you a good Day, for good morrow, Sir, &c. as for the other ranks of persons, we say, to the King, *Vuestra Magestad*, Your Majesty ; to the Pope, *Santidad*, *Beautitud*, *Sanctissimo Pádre*, *Beatissimo Pádre*, Holiness, Most Holy Father (Titles which should be given only to God) ; to a Prince

V. Altéza, your Highness; to a Cardinal, *V. Emi-néncia*, your Eminency; to the Grandees, Dukes, Generals, and Ambassadors *V. Exceléncia*, your Excellency; to a Bishop, *Vuestra Señoría ilustríssima*, your illustrious Lordship; to Earls, Marqueffes, *Vuestra Señoría*. Note, That some use *Vuestra*, and *Vuestra* promiscuously; but I am of opinion that *Vuestra* is a word out of use, &c.

I observed, that some of the Nobility in Spain, when they speak to any Gentleman inferior in rank, never did make use of *Béso las Manos de v. m^d.*, but *Servidor de v. m^d.*; and so they say *v. m^d. sea bien venido*, or *bien venido séa el Señor Fuláno*; *buénos días dé Dios al Sr. Fuláno*, &c. And when an inferior spoke to them he would be better off, if he said *Béso las Mános de V. Señoría*, than saying *Servidór de V. Señoría*; but at present this difference is almost left off, &c.

The preceding Spanish Words are abbreviated thus in writing : *V. Mgd*; *V. Santd*, or *Beatd*, *SS.* or *BB.* *Pádre*; *V. Alt*; *V. Em*; *V. Exc*; *V. S. il*; *V. S.*; *V. Md.*

Of the Auxiliar Verbs.

AUXILIAR Verbs take their etymology of the Latin *Auxilium*, *Auxilio*, help, so called, because they are wanted, and help to the conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliar or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the Spanish there are more than in any other, as *podér*, *tenér*, *solér*, *ir*, &c. without which we can't rightly explain the meaning of some tenses; but there are three Principal, viz. *bavér* (instead of whom we do likewise use the Verb *tenér*) to have, *estár* and *sér*, to be; the two first serve for the active, neuter, and reciprocal Verbs; *bavér* serves also for the passive Verbs in their compound.

tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and the Verb *sér* serves for the passive Verbs. And as the other Verbs can't be conjugated without these, we think it proper to begin by

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Havér, To have.

The Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing.	Plur.
Yo hé,	<i>I have</i> } Nosotros hémos, or havémos,
Tu hás,	<i>Thou hast</i> } Vosotros haveís, El or aquél há <i>He hath</i> Ellos or aquéllos han,

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Plur.
Havía,	<i>I had</i> } Havíamos
Havias	<i>Thou hadst</i> } Haviadeis, or havíais
Havía,	<i>He had</i> } Havían

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Plur.
Húve	<i>I have bad</i> } Huvímos,
Huviste	<i>Thou hast bad</i> } Huvístes,
Húvo	<i>He hath bad</i> } Huvíeron,

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	Plur.	
Yo hé		<i>I have bad</i>
Tu hás		<i>Thou hast bad</i>
El há		<i>He hath bad</i>
Nosotros hémos		<i>We have bad</i>
Vosotros haveís		<i>Ye have bad</i>
Ellos han		<i>They have bad</i>

The third Preterperfect thus :

Yo húve havido.

Is in no use in Spanish.

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havíz Havías Havia Havíamos	Havido,	I bad bad Thou badst bad He bad bad We bad bad
Plur.	Havíadeis Havían		Ye bad bad They bad bad

First Future.

Sing.	Havré, Havrás, Havrá, Havrémox	I shall or will have
Plur.	Havréis Havrán	You shall or will have
		He shall or will have
		We shall or will have
		Ye shall or will have
		They shall or will have.

The other Futures are

Second, Yo hé de havér	I must have.
Third, Havré de havér	I shall be obliged to have
Fourth, Havia de havér	I was to have

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Háyas tu Háya aquél, or el	Have thou Have he, or let him have
Plur.	Hayámos nosótros, Havéd vosótros, Háyan aquéllos or ellos	Have we, or let us have Have ye, or let ye have Have they, or let them have.

The Spaniards use, instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten*, of *Tengo*, I have or hold; which *Tengo* is often used for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood *Ten*, of *Tengo*, so commonly used for *áyas*, *ayá*, is thus declined :

Sing.	Ten tu, Tenga el	Have, or hold thou Let him have or hold
Plur.	Tengámos nosótros Tenéd vosótros Tengan ellos,	Let us have or hold Do ye have or hold Let them have or hold.

See this Verb among the Irregulars.

Note, The Optative Mood is us'd with these signs, as I have said, *Oxalá*, or *O si*, or *Plugiésse a Dios*, Would to God, I pray God, or God grant. The Potential like the *Latin*, with these signs, *may*, *can*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*; both declined like the Subjunctive following.

Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	Háya, Si, or cómo	Háyas Háya	If, or when I may have, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	Hayámos Si, or como	Hayáis Háyan	If, or when We may have, &c.

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Si, or</i>	Huviéra, huviéssé, havría	<i>If, or when I might,</i> <i>could, or should have.</i>
como	Huviéras, huviésses, havrías	
<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, huviéssé, havría	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéramos, huviéssemos, havriámos	
<i>Si, or</i>	Huviéradeis, huviéssedeis, havriadeis	
como	Huviéran, huviéssen, havrián.	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Háya, Si, or como	Háyas Háya	If, or when I had, or when I have had.
<i>Plur.</i>	Hayámos Si, or como	Hayáis Háyan	If, or when We had, &c.

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéssé	<i>If, or when I bad bad, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	Huviéras, or huviésses	
como	Huviéra, or huviéssé	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	<i>If, or when We bad bad, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
como	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future.

Sing.	Huviére		If, or when I shall have hereafter, &c.
Si, or	Huviéres		
como	Huviére		
Plur.	Huviéremos		
Si, or	Huviéredeis		If, or when I shall have bad, &c.
como	Huviéren		

Second Future.

Huviére		Havido	If, or when I shall have bad, &c.
Huviéres			
Huviére			
Huviéremos			
Huviéreis			
Huviéren			or otherwise havré havido.

Infinitive Mood.

Havér	To have.
Haver havido	To have had.
Hayer de haver	To have hereafter.
Gerund. Haviendo,	Having.

Participles.

Pres. El que ha	The person who hast
Pas. Havido	Had
Supine à havér	To have, in having, &c.

Note, That the Spanish Academy hath changed *bavér* into *babér*; but as this innovation is against the practice both of ancient and modern Authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *bavér*.

The other Auxiliary Verbs Estár, and Ser, To be.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo estóí	Yo sóí	I am
	Tu estás	Tu éres	Thou art
	El está	El es	He is
	Nosotros estámos	Nosotros sómos	We are
Plur.	Vosotros estáis	Vosotros sóis	Ye are
	Ellos están	Ellos son	They are

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Yo éstába Tu estabas El estaba	Yo éra Tu éras El éra	<i>I was</i> <i>Thou wast</i> <i>He was</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Nosotros estábamos Vosotros estábais or estábadeis Ellos estaban	Nosotros éramos Vosotros érais, or éradeis Ellos éran	<i>We were</i> <i>Ye were</i> <i>They were</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Estuve Estuviste Estuvo Estuvimos Estuvisteis Estuvieron	Fuí Fuiste Fué Fuimos Fuisteis Fuérón	<i>I have been</i> <i>Thou hast been</i> <i>He hath been</i> <i>We have been</i> <i>Ye have been</i> <i>They have been</i>
<i>Plur.</i>			

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, or húve estádo Has, or huviste estádo Ha, or húvo estádo Havémos, or huvímos estádo	He, or húve sido Has, or huviste sido Ha, or húvo sido Havémos, or huvímos sido	<i>I have been, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havéis, or huvísteis estádo Han, or huvieron estádo	Havéis, or huvísteis sido Han, or huvieron sido	

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Havía estando Havías estando Havía estando Havíamos estando Haviadeis, or havíais estando Hayan estando	Havía sido Havías sido Havía sido Havíamos sido Haviáis, or haviadeis sido Havían sido	<i>I had been, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>			

First

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Estaré Estarás Estará Estarémos	Seré Serás Será Serémos	} <i>I shall, or will be, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estaréis Estarán	Seréis Serán	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or Tengo de estar Has de estar Ha de estar Hemos de estar	He de ser Has de ser Ha de ser Hemos de ser	} <i>I must be, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havéis de estar Han de estar	Havéis de ser Han de ser	

Third Future.

Havré de estar, or sé *I shall be obliged to be*

Fourth Future.

Havia de estar, or sé *I had to be, or I was to be.*

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Está tu Esté el	Se tu Séa el	} <i>Be thou Be he Let us be Be ye Let them be.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estemos nosotros Estad vosotros	Seámos nosotros Sed vosotros	
	Estén ellos	Séan ellos	

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	Esté	Séa	<i>If, or when I am, &c.</i>
Si, or	Estés	Séas	
como	Esté	Séa	
<i>Plur.</i>	Estémos	Seámos	
Si, or	Estéis	Seáis	
como	Estén	Séan	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Estuviéra estuviéssse, or estaría	Fuéra, fuéssse, sería	<i>If, or when I was, &c.</i>
Si, or	Estuviéras estuviéssses, or estarias	Fuéras, fuéssses, ferías	
como	Estuviéra estuviéssse, or estaría	Fuéra, fuéssse, seria	
	Estuviéramos estuviéssse- mos, or estariámos	Fuéramos, fuésssemos, seríamos	
<i>Plur.</i>	Estuviéradeis, estuviéssedeis, or estariádeis	Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, seriádeis	
Si, or	Estuviéran estuviéssien, or estarian	Fuérán, fuéssen, se- rian	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Haya estádo	Haya sido	<i>If, or when I have been, &c.</i>
Si, or	Hayas estádo	Hayas sido	
como	Haya estádo	Haya sido	
<i>Plur.</i>	Hayámos estádo	Hayamos sido	
Si, or	Hayáis estádo	Hayáis sido	
como	Hayan estádo	Hayán sido	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéssse	<i>If, or when I had been, &c.</i>
Si, or	Huviéras, or huviéssses	
como	Huviéra, or huviéssse	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	
Si, or	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
como	Huviérán, or huviéssien	

First

First Future.

Sing.	Estuviére	Fuére	If I shall, or should be, or If, or when I had been, &c.
Si, or	Estuviéres	Fuéres	
como	Estuviére	Fuére	
Plur.	Estuviéremos	Fuéremos	
Si, or	Estuviéredeis	Fuéredeis	
como	Estuviéren	Fuéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére	When I shall, or should have been, &c.
Si, or	Huviéres	
como	Huviére	
Plur.	Huviéremos	
Si, or	Huviéredes	
como	Huviéren	

or quando havré estado, or sido.

Infinitive Mood.

Pres.	Estár,	Sér	To be.
Pret. perf.	Havér estado,	Havér fido,	To have been.
Future	Havér de estar,	Havér de ser,	To be hereafter.
Gerund.	Estando, fiendo		Being.

Participles.

Pres.	Elque esta, or es,	The Person who is.
Pas.	Estado, Sido,	Been.
Sup.	à estar, à ser	To be in being.

The Optative is the same as the Subjunctive.

BOTH these Verbs *Estár* and *Sér* signify *To be*, the English having no word to distinguish between them, and yet they cannot be indifferently used, there being a considerable difference between them, which is, that *Ser* signifies the proper and inseparable Essence of a Thing, denoting the Quality, or Quantity, as *Ser bueno*, to be good; *Ser malo*, to be wicked; *Ser grande*, to be big; *Ser pequeño*, to be little, &c. But *Estár* denotes Place, or some adjunct

adjunct Quality, as *Estar en casa*, to be at home; *Estar bueno*, to be well; *Estar malo*, or *enfermo*, to be sick. For in enquiring after a Man's Health, the Spaniards make use of the word *Estar*, as *como estais?* How do you? The Answer is, *Estoy bueno*, or *malo*. I am well or ill. Though sometimes the Answer is without the Verb, saying only, *bueno*, or *malo*, well or sick; or placing the Verb after the Adjective, as *bueno estoy*, I am well. Where it is to be observed that *bueno* and *malo*, do not signify good and bad, as they do upon other occasions, but well or ill. In short, *estar*, is us'd to express any thing that concerns the affections, or passions of the Soul, as *estoy triste*, I am melancholy, *estoy alegre*, I am merry. So that as has been said *ser* must be used to denote the inseparable Essence, or Being, whereas *estar* implies Accidents, as *El vestido es bueno*, pero *esta mal hecho*, the Cloaths are good, but they are ill made; where we see the essential Being of the Thing itself under the word *ser*, or *es*, and the accidental fault of its being ill made under the word *estar*. *Ser* likewise is used to express the condition, or temper of a Man in its nature, as *este hombre es colérico de condicion*, this Man is of a coleric disposition; and *estar* express the fit or action, as *este hombre está colérico*, this Man is actually angry, or is in a coleric fit.

Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs regular in ar, as Revelar, to reveal, or discover.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Yo revelo</i> <i>Tu revelas</i> <i>El revela</i> <i>Nosotros revelamos</i> <i>Vos revelais</i> <i>Ellos revelan</i>	<i>I reveal.</i> <i>Thou, or you reveal.</i> <i>He reveals.</i> <i>We reveal.</i> <i>Ye reveal.</i> <i>They reveal.</i>
------------------------------	---	--

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Yo revelábá</td><td><i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Tu revelábás</td><td><i>You did reveal.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>El revelábá</td><td><i>He did reveal.</i></td></tr> </table>	Yo revelábá	<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i>	Tu revelábás	<i>You did reveal.</i>	El revelábá	<i>He did reveal.</i>
Yo revelábá	<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i>						
Tu revelábás	<i>You did reveal.</i>						
El revelábá	<i>He did reveal.</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Nosotros revelábamos</td><td><i>We did reveal.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Vosotros revelábadeis, or revelábais</td><td><i>Ye did reveal.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Ellos revelában</td><td><i>They did reveal.</i></td></tr> </table>	Nosotros revelábamos	<i>We did reveal.</i>	Vosotros revelábadeis, or revelábais	<i>Ye did reveal.</i>	Ellos revelában	<i>They did reveal.</i>
Nosotros revelábamos	<i>We did reveal.</i>						
Vosotros revelábadeis, or revelábais	<i>Ye did reveal.</i>						
Ellos revelában	<i>They did reveal.</i>						

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Revelé</td><td><i>I revealed.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Reveláste</td><td><i>You revealed.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Reveló</td><td><i>He revealed.</i></td></tr> </table>	Revelé	<i>I revealed.</i>	Reveláste	<i>You revealed.</i>	Reveló	<i>He revealed.</i>
Revelé	<i>I revealed.</i>						
Reveláste	<i>You revealed.</i>						
Reveló	<i>He revealed.</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Revelámos</td><td><i>We revealed.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Revelásteis</td><td><i>Ye revealed.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Reveláron</td><td><i>They revealed.</i></td></tr> </table>	Revelámos	<i>We revealed.</i>	Revelásteis	<i>Ye revealed.</i>	Reveláron	<i>They revealed.</i>
Revelámos	<i>We revealed.</i>						
Revelásteis	<i>Ye revealed.</i>						
Reveláron	<i>They revealed.</i>						

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>He, or húve</td><td><i>I have revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Has, or huviste</td><td><i>Thou hast revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Ha, or húvo</td><td><i>He hath revealed</i></td></tr> </table>	He, or húve	<i>I have revealed</i>	Has, or huviste	<i>Thou hast revealed</i>	Ha, or húvo	<i>He hath revealed</i>
He, or húve	<i>I have revealed</i>						
Has, or huviste	<i>Thou hast revealed</i>						
Ha, or húvo	<i>He hath revealed</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Havémos, or huvímos</td><td><i>We have revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havéis, or huvísteis</td><td><i>Ye have revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Han, or huvieron</td><td><i>They have revealed.</i></td></tr> </table>	Havémos, or huvímos	<i>We have revealed</i>	Havéis, or huvísteis	<i>Ye have revealed</i>	Han, or huvieron	<i>They have revealed.</i>
Havémos, or huvímos	<i>We have revealed</i>						
Havéis, or huvísteis	<i>Ye have revealed</i>						
Han, or huvieron	<i>They have revealed.</i>						

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Havía</td><td><i>I had revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havías</td><td><i>Thou hadst revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havía</td><td><i>He had revealed</i></td></tr> </table>	Havía	<i>I had revealed</i>	Havías	<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>	Havía	<i>He had revealed</i>
Havía	<i>I had revealed</i>						
Havías	<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>						
Havía	<i>He had revealed</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Havíamos</td><td><i>We had revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havíadeis</td><td><i>Ye had revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havían</td><td><i>They had revealed.</i></td></tr> </table>	Havíamos	<i>We had revealed</i>	Havíadeis	<i>Ye had revealed</i>	Havían	<i>They had revealed.</i>
Havíamos	<i>We had revealed</i>						
Havíadeis	<i>Ye had revealed</i>						
Havían	<i>They had revealed.</i>						
	<table border="0"> <tr> <td></td><td><i>I had revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td></td><td><i>Thou hadst revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td></td><td><i>He had revealed</i></td></tr> </table>		<i>I had revealed</i>		<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>		<i>He had revealed</i>
	<i>I had revealed</i>						
	<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>						
	<i>He had revealed</i>						
	<table border="0"> <tr> <td></td><td><i>We had revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td></td><td><i>Ye had revealed</i></td></tr> <tr> <td></td><td><i>They had revealed.</i></td></tr> </table>		<i>We had revealed</i>		<i>Ye had revealed</i>		<i>They had revealed.</i>
	<i>We had revealed</i>						
	<i>Ye had revealed</i>						
	<i>They had revealed.</i>						

First

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Revelaré, Revelaras, Revelará,</i>	<i>I shall or will reveal You shall or will reveal He shall or will reveal</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Revelarémos, Revelareis, Revelarán,</i>	<i>We shall or will reveal Ye shall or will reveal They shall or will reveal.</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ He, or téngo de revelár, Has de revelár, Ha de revelár,</i>	<i>I am to or must reveal, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Hémos, or havémos de re- velár, Havéis de revelár, Han de revelár,</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Havré Havrás Havrá Havrémos</i>	<i>I shall be obliged to reveal, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Havréis Havrán</i>	

Third Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Havré Havrás</i>	<i>{ de Revelár</i>	<i>I shall be obliged to reveal, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Havrá Havrémos</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Havréis Havrán</i>	<i>{ de Revelár</i>	<i>I shall be obliged to reveal, &c.</i>

Fourth Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Havía Havías</i>	<i>{ de Revelár</i>	<i>I had, or I was to re- veal, &c.</i>
	<i>{ Havía Havíamos</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Haviádeis Havian</i>	<i>{ de Revelár</i>	<i>I had, or I was to re- veal, &c.</i>

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Revéla tu, Revéle el,</i>	<i>Do you reveal, or reveal thou Let him reveal.</i>
--------------	------------------------------------	--

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Revelémos nosótrós,</td><td><i>Let us reveal.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Revelád vosótrós,</td><td><i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Revélen éllos,</td><td><i>Let them reveal.</i></td></tr> </table>	Revelémos nosótrós,	<i>Let us reveal.</i>	Revelád vosótrós,	<i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i>	Revélen éllos,	<i>Let them reveal.</i>
Revelémos nosótrós,	<i>Let us reveal.</i>						
Revelád vosótrós,	<i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i>						
Revélen éllos,	<i>Let them reveal.</i>						

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.

If, When, would God, God Grant.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Yo revéle</td><td rowspan="4"><i>When, or God grant, &c.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Tu revéles</td></tr> <tr> <td>El revéle</td></tr> <tr> <td>Nosótrós revelémos</td></tr> </table>	Yo revéle	<i>When, or God grant, &c.</i>	Tu revéles	El revéle	Nosótrós revelémos
Yo revéle	<i>When, or God grant, &c.</i>					
Tu revéles						
El revéle						
Nosótrós revelémos						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Vosótrós reveléis</td><td rowspan="2"><i>I reveal, &c.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Ellos revélen,</td></tr> </table>	Vosótrós reveléis	<i>I reveal, &c.</i>	Ellos revélen,		
Vosótrós reveléis	<i>I reveal, &c.</i>					
Ellos revélen,						

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Revelára, revelásse, revelaría</td><td rowspan="4"><i>When, or would to God I did reveal, &c.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Reveláras, revelásses, revelarias</td></tr> <tr> <td>Revelára, revelásse, revelaría</td></tr> <tr> <td>Reveláramos, revelássemos, revelaríamos</td></tr> </table>	Revelára, revelásse, revelaría	<i>When, or would to God I did reveal, &c.</i>	Reveláras, revelásses, revelarias	Revelára, revelásse, revelaría	Reveláramos, revelássemos, revelaríamos
Revelára, revelásse, revelaría	<i>When, or would to God I did reveal, &c.</i>					
Reveláras, revelásses, revelarias						
Revelára, revelásse, revelaría						
Reveláramos, revelássemos, revelaríamos						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Reveláradeis, revelássedeis, revelaríadeis</td><td rowspan="2"><i>I reveal, &c.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Reveláran, revelássen, revelarian.</td></tr> </table>	Reveláradeis, revelássedeis, revelaríadeis	<i>I reveal, &c.</i>	Reveláran, revelássen, revelarian.		
Reveláradeis, revelássedeis, revelaríadeis	<i>I reveal, &c.</i>					
Reveláran, revelássen, revelarian.						

Three Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Haya,</td><td rowspan="6"><i>When, or would to God, &c.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Hayas,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Haya,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hayámos</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hayáis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hayan</td></tr> </table>	Haya,	<i>When, or would to God, &c.</i>	Hayas,	Haya,	Hayámos	Hayáis	Hayan
Haya,	<i>When, or would to God, &c.</i>							
Hayas,								
Haya,								
Hayámos								
Hayáis								
Hayan								
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Reveládo,</td><td><i>I have reveal, &c.</i></td> </tr> </table>	Reveládo,	<i>I have reveal, &c.</i>					
Reveládo,	<i>I have reveal, &c.</i>							

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssie Huviéras, or huviéssies	Revelado,	When or would to God, &c. I had reveal- ed, &c.
	Huviéra, or huviéssie		
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Reveláremos	When or would to God, &c. I shall or will reveal, &c.
Plur.	Reveláredeis Reveláren,	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos	Revelado, or otherwise havré revelado.	When or would to God, &c. I shall or will have re- vealed, &c.
Plur.	Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Revelár,

To reveal.

Preterperfect.

Havér revelado

To have revealed.

Future.

Havér, or esperár de revelár

To reveal hereafter.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Revelando,

Revealing.

Supine of the Active Signification,

A revelár,

To be about to reveal.

Supine of the Passive Signification,

A ser revelado,

To be revealed.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice,

Revelante, or el que revelá,

Revealing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Revelado,

Revealed.

All regular Verbs that have their Infinitive in *ar*, are conjugated in all Points like this. The Irregular shall be treated of, after the following List of regular Verbs in *ar*, above spoken of.

Regular Verbs in *ar*.

L LAmár, *to call.*
 Ayunár, *to fast.*
 Comprár, *to buy.*
 Recompensar, *to requite.*
 Apartár, *to set aside.*
 Separár, *to separate.*
 Apelár, *to appeal.*
 Acomodár, *to adjust.*
 Pelear, *to fight.*
 Cantár, *to sing.*
 Llorár, *to weep.*

Aprovechár, *to profit.*
 Cenár, *to sup.*
 Hallár, *to find.*
 Topár, *to find.*
 Ganár, *to gain.*
 Contestár, *to contest.*
 Despojár, *to strip.*
 Arrastrár, *to drag.*
 Fiár, *to trust.*
 Pagár, *to pay.*
 Saqueár, *to plunder.*

H

Amenazár,

98 *The RUDIMENTS of*

Amenazár, <i>to threaten.</i>	Mandár, <i>to command.</i>
Injuriár, <i>to revile.</i>	Dissimulár, <i>to dissimile.</i>
Afrentár, <i>to affront.</i>	Engañár, <i>to deceive.</i>
Aventurár, <i>to venture.</i>	Defengañár, <i>to undeceive.</i>
Matár, <i>to kill.</i>	Bailár, <i>to dance.</i>
Curár, <i>to cure, or heal.</i>	Danzár, <i>to dance.</i>
Sanár, <i>to heal, or recover health.</i>	Domár, <i>to tame.</i>
Amedrantár, <i>to put into fear.</i>	Lisongeár, <i>to flatter.</i>
Espantár, <i>to frighten.</i>	Martyrizár, <i>to torment.</i>
Manchár, <i>to spot, or stain.</i>	Encantár, <i>to enchant.</i>
Alzár, <i>to take up.</i>	Desnudár, <i>to strip.</i>
Levantár, <i>to raise.</i>	Reposár, <i>to repose.</i>
Sudár, <i>to sweat.</i>	Cansár, <i>to tire.</i>
Remediár, <i>to remedy.</i>	Animár, <i>to encourage.</i>
Cortár, <i>to cut.</i>	Jurár, <i>to swear.</i>
Atár, <i>to tie.</i>	Rezár, <i>to pray.</i>
Azotár, <i>to whip.</i>	Esternudár, <i>to sneeze.</i>
Estimár, <i>to esteem.</i>	Callár, <i>to be silent.</i>
Borrár, <i>to blot out.</i>	Passeár, <i>to walk.</i>
Lavár, <i>to wash.</i>	Alejár, <i>to set at a distance.</i>
Nadár, <i>to swim.</i>	Condenár, <i>to condemn.</i>
Hurtár, <i>to steal.</i>	Dexár, <i>to leave.</i>
Robár, <i>to rob, to steal.</i>	Ovidár, <i>to forget.</i>
Besár, <i>to kiss.</i>	Porfiár, <i>to contend.</i>
Cabár, <i>to dig.</i>	Gastár, <i>to spend.</i>
Cazár, <i>to hunt.</i>	Acusár, <i>to accuse.</i>
Hechár vino, o agua, <i>to pour out wine, or water.</i>	Aparejár, <i>to make ready.</i>
Hechár de bever, <i>to fill out drink.</i>	Despreciár, <i>to despise.</i>
Hechár de cása, <i>to turn out of doors.</i>	Menospreciár, <i>to undervalue.</i>
Hechár úna ayúda, <i>to give a chyfster.</i>	Maltratár, <i>to misuse.</i>
Despavilár la véla, <i>to snuff the candle.</i>	Empeñár, <i>to engage.</i>
Despavilár úna cósa, <i>to make a thing vanish.</i>	Acabár, <i>to finish.</i>
Despavilár los ójos, <i>to awake from sleep.</i>	Amparár, <i>to protect.</i>
Alumbrár, <i>to light.</i>	Desamparár, <i>to forsake.</i>
Tomár, <i>to take.</i>	Mirár, <i>to look.</i>
Quitár, <i>to remove, or to take away.</i>	Declarár, <i>to declare.</i>
Alabár, <i>to praise.</i>	Procurár, <i>to procure.</i>
Alquilár, <i>to hire.</i>	Entrár, <i>to come in.</i>
Perdonár, <i>to pardon.</i>	Criár, <i>to breed.</i>
Caminár, <i>to travel.</i>	Embiár, <i>to send.</i>
Reculár, <i>to draw back.</i>	Apear, <i>to alight.</i>
Adelantár, <i>to forward.</i>	Retirár, <i>to retire.</i>
Rehusár, <i>to refuse.</i>	Abordár, <i>to come to shore.</i>
	Arrebatar, <i>to snatch.</i>
	Arrancár, <i>to tear up.</i>
	Desarraigár, <i>to root up.</i>
	Amansár, <i>to tame.</i>
	Presentár, <i>to present.</i>

Representár,

Representár, to represent.	Conformár, to conform.
Defafiár, to challenge.	Visitár, to visit.
Ayudár, to help.	Confrontár, to confront.
Disfamár, to defame.	Comparár, to compare.
Honrár, to honour.	Adorár, to adore.
Tapár, to cover.	Tartamudeár, to stammer.
Sitiár, to besiege.	Galanteár, to court.
Enojár, to anger.	Escaramuzár, to skirmish.
Usár, to use.	Disparár, to discharge.
Casár, to marry.	Ensanchár, to widen.
Amár, to love.	Bambaleár, to totter.

It would be endless to pretend to mention all the Verbs of this sort, and therefore these may suffice; but we may now proceed to the irregular Verbs of this Conjugation, which are many, and must be particularly taken notice of.

Here follow the irregular Verbs, which being under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

The first Conjugation of Verbs irregular in ar.

Dar, To give.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo doí Tu dás El da	I give You give He gives
Plur.	Nosotros dámos Vosotros dáis Ellos dan	We give Ye give They give.

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Dába Dábás Dába	<i>I did give, or I was giving</i> <i>You did give</i> <i>He did give</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Dábamos Dábadeis, or dábais Dában	<i>We did give</i> <i>Ye did give</i> <i>They did give</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Dí Díste Dió	<i>I gave</i> <i>You gave</i> <i>He gave</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Dímos Dísteis Diéron	<i>We gave</i> <i>Ye gave</i> <i>They gave</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Yo he, or húve dádo Tu has, or huviste dádo El ha, or húvo dádo	<i>I have given</i> <i>You have given</i> <i>He has given</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Hémos, or huvímos dádo Havéis, or huvísteis dádo Han, or huvíeron dádo	<i>We have given</i> <i>Ye have given</i> <i>They have given.</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Havía Havías Havía	<i>Dádo,</i>	<i>I had given, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havíamos Haviadeis Havían		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Daré, Darás, Dará, Darémos,	<i>I shall, or will give, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Daréis, Darán,	

Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or Téngo de dár Has de dár Ha de dár Havémos de dár	}	<i>I am to, or must give, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havéis de dár Han de dár		

Third Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havré Havrás Havrá Havrémos	{ De dár,	<i>I shall be obliged to give, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havréis Havrán		

Fourth Future, alias a Tense of Circumlocution.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havia Havias Havia Havíamos	{ De dár,	<i>I had to give, or I was to give, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Havíadeis Havían		

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Da tu, De el,	<i>Give thou</i>
	Démos nosótrios,	<i>Let him give</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Dád vosotros, Den éllos,	<i>Let us give</i>
		<i>Give ye</i>
		<i>Let them give.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, God grant, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Yo de, Tu des, El de, Démos, Déis, Dén,	}	<i>When or God grant I do give, &c.</i>
------------------------------	--	---	---

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Diéra, diésse, daría Diéras, diésses, darias Diéra, diésse, daría Diéramos, diéssemos, daríamos Diéradeis, or diérais, dariaideis, or daríais, diéssedeis, or díesseis Diéran, diéßen, darían	}	<i>When, or God grant I did give, or when I might, could, or should give.</i>
------------------------------	---	---	--

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Háya, Hayas, Haya, Hayámos Hayáis Hayan	}	<i>When, or would to God, &c. I had given, or when I have given, &c.</i>
------------------------------	--	---	--

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i> <i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéramos, or huviéssémos Huviéradeis, or huviéssédeis Huviéran, or huviéßen	}	<i>When, or would to God I had given, &c.</i>
------------------------------	---	---	---

First

First Future.

Sing.	Díere		<i>When, or God grant I shall give, &c.</i>
	Díeres		
	Díere		
	Díeremos		
Plur.	Díeredeis		
	Díeren		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré		<i>When, or God grant I shall or will give, &c.</i>
	Huviéres		
	Huviére		
	Huviéremos		
Plur.	Huviéredes		
	Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dar *To give*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dádo *To have given*

Future.

Havér de dár *To give hereafter*

Gerund.

Dándo *Giving*

Participle Passive.

Dádo *Given*

Participle

Participle of the Present Tense, Active Voice,

Dante, or el que da Giving

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espera de dar To give breakfast

First Supine.

A Dár To be about to give

Second Supine.

A ser Dado To be given

The next Irregular Verb of this Conjugation is,

Almorzár, *To breakfast.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	{ Almuérzo Almuérzas Almuérza	I breakfast
		You breakfast
Plur.	{ Almorzámos Almorzáis Almuérzan	He breakfasts
		We breakfast

Ye breakfast
They breakfast

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Almorzába Almorzábas Almorzába	I did breakfast, or I was breakfasting You did breakfast He did breakfast
-------	--	---

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	Almorzábamos Almorzábais, or Almorzábadeis Almorzában	<i>We did breakfast</i> <i>Ye did breakfast</i> <i>They did breakfast</i>
--------------	--	---

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Almorzé Almorzaſté Almorzó Almorzámos	<i>I have breakfasted</i> <i>You have breakfasted</i> <i>He has breakfasted</i> <i>We have breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Almorzáſteis Almorzáron	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i> <i>They have breakfasted</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, or húve almorzádo Has, or huviste almorzádo Ha, or húvo almorzádo Hém̄os, havémos, or huvímos	<i>I have breakfasted</i> <i>You have breakfasted</i> <i>He has breakfasted</i> <i>We have breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	almorzádo Havéis, or huvísteis almorzádo Han, or huviéron almorzádo	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i> <i>They have breakfasted</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Havía almorzádo Havías almorzádo Havía almorzádo	<i>I had breakfasted</i> <i>You had breakfasted</i> <i>He had breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Haviámos almorzádo Haviadéis almorzádo Havían almorzádo	<i>We had breakfasted</i> <i>Ye had breakfasted</i> <i>They had breakfasted</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Almorzaré Almorzarás Almorzará Almorzarémos	<i>I will, or shall breakfast,</i> <i>&c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Almorzaréis Almorzarán	

Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or téngo de almorzár</i>	<i>I am to, or must breakfast, &c.</i>
	<i>Has de almorzár</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Ha de almorzár</i>	<i>I shall be obliged to breakfast</i>
	<i>Hémos, or havémos de almorzár</i>	
	<i>Havéis de almorzár</i>	<i>I was to breakfast.</i>
	<i>Han de almorzár</i>	
<i>Havré de almorzár</i>		
<i>Havía de almorzár</i>		

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Almuérza</i>	<i>Do you breakfast</i>
	<i>Almuérze</i>	<i>Let him breakfast</i>
	<i>Almorzémos</i>	<i>Let us breakfast</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Almorzád</i>	<i>Do ye breakfast</i>
	<i>Almuérzen</i>	<i>Let them breakfast</i>

*The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with the Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.**If, When, would God, God grant.*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Yo almuérze</i>	<i>If, When, would to God I breakfast, &c.</i>
	<i>Tu almuérzes</i>	
	<i>El almuérze</i>	
	<i>Almorzémos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Almorzéis</i>	
	<i>Almuérzen</i>	

Three

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría Almorzáras, almorzásses, almorzarías	If, when, would to God I did breakfast, &c.
	Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	
	Almorzáramos, almorzássemos, almorzariámos	
Plur.	Almorzáradeis, almorzássedeis, almorzariadeis	
	Almorzáran, almorzássen, almorzarián	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	Almorzádo,	If, when, would to God I have breakfasted, &c.
Plur.	Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse Huviéras, or huviéssses	Almorzádo,	If, when, would to God I had breakfasted, &c.
	Huviéra, or huviéssse		
	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Almorzáre Almorzáres	Almorzádo,	If, when, would to God I shall breakfast, &c.
	Almorzáre		
	Almorzáremos		
Plur.	Almorzáredeis		
	Almorzáren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or havré Huviéres	Almorzádo,	If, when, God grant I shall or will have break- fasted, &c.
	Huviéra		
	Huviéremos		
Plur.	Huviéradeis		
	Huviéren		

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood,**Present.****Almorzár***To breakfast***Preterperfect.****Havér almorzádo***To have breakfasted.***Future.****Havér, or esperár de almorcár,***To be to breakfast breakfaster***Gerund.****Almorzándo***breakfasting***First Supine.****À Almorzár***To be about breakfasting***Second Supine.****À ser almorzádo***Having breakfasted***Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.****El que almuérza***Breakfasting***Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.****Almorzádo***Breakfasted, &c.**The*

The following Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, terminating in *ar*, are all conjugated after the same manner as *Almorzár*, changing the Penultima *o* into *ue* in the three Persons Singular, and the third of the Plural in all the Present Tenses.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Contár, <i>to count</i>	Cuénto	Conté
Desollár, <i>to flea</i>	Desuéllo	Desollé
Resollár, <i>to breast</i>	Resuéllo	Resollé
Acordár, <i>to remember</i>	Acuéndo	Acordé
Mostrár, <i>to show</i>	Muéstro	Mostré
Affolár, <i>to destroy</i>	Affuéllo	Affolé
Volár, <i>to fly</i>	Uuélo	Volé
Apostár, <i>to wager</i>	Apuésto	Aposté
Hollár, <i>to trample on</i>	Huéollo	Hollé
Soltár, <i>to let loose</i>	Suélto	Solté
Forzár, <i>to force</i>	Fuerzo	Forcé
Provár, <i>to try, or prove</i>	Pruévo	Provó
Sonár, <i>to sound</i>	Suénlo	Soné
Atronár, <i>to thunder</i>	Atruéno	Atroné
Degollár, <i>to behead</i>	Deguéllo	Degollé
Consolár, <i>to comfort</i>	Consuélo	Consolé
Encontrár, <i>to meet</i>	Encuérntro	Encontré.

But *jugár* to play, changes *u* into *ue*.

All the Verbs ending in *gar* have the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative in *gue*; as likewise the third of the singular, the first and last of the plural of the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. pe. Imperative, Pres. Optat.

Colgar, <i>to hang</i>	Cuérgo	Colgué	Cuérgue aquél	que yo Cuérgue
Rogár, <i>to intreat</i>	Ruégo	Rogué	Ruérgue el	que Ruegue
Pagár, <i>to pay</i>	Págo	Pagué	Págue el	que yo Págue
Holgár <i>to be idle</i>	Huérgo	Holgué	Huérgue el	que yo Huérgue
Regár, <i>to water</i>	Riégo	Régue	Riérgue el	que yo Ríegue &c.

110 *The RUDIMENTS of*

The Verbs in *cár* change *car* in *que* in the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative; the third singular, the first and last of the plural in the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. p. Imperative, Pres. Optative.

Tocár,	tóco	toqué	tóqué el	que yo toqué
<i>to touch,</i>				
<i>to feel.</i>				

Trocár,	truéco	troqu	truéque el	que yo truéque, &c.
<i>to change</i>				

The following Verbs change the penultima *e* into *ie* in all the persons singular, and the third of the plural of the present tense of the indicative, imperative, and optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Imperative, Present Optative.

Apretár, <i>to squeeze</i>	apriéto	apiéta tu	que yo apriéte
Emmendár, <i>to mind</i>	emmiéndo	emmiénda tu	que yo emmiénde
Empezár, <i>to begin</i>	empiézo	empiéza tu	que yo empiéce
Cerrár <i>to shut</i>	Ciérro	Cierra tu	que yo ciérre
Enterrár, <i>to bury</i>	entiérro	entiérra tu	que yo entíerre
Desterrár, <i>to banish</i>	destiérro	destiérra tu	que yo destíerre
Confessar, <i>to confess</i>	confiésso	confiéssa tu	que yo confésse

And several other more, whose irregularity is only in the following Tenses, as

Tentár, to feel.

Present Indicative.

Sing. { Tiénto, Tiéntas Tiénta }	I feel, &c.	Plur. { Tentámos Tentáis Tiéntan }	Imperative:
--	-------------	--	-------------

Imperative.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Tienta tu,</td><td>Feel thou</td><td>Tentemos nosotros</td></tr> <tr> <td>Tiente el</td><td></td><td>Tentad vosotros</td></tr> </table>	Tienta tu,	Feel thou	Tentemos nosotros	Tiente el		Tentad vosotros
Tienta tu,	Feel thou	Tentemos nosotros					
Tiente el		Tentad vosotros					
		<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Tienten aquellos</td> </tr> </table>	Tienten aquellos				
Tienten aquellos							

Present Optative.

Sing.	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>que Yotiente, that I may</td><td>Tentemos</td></tr> <tr> <td>Tiéntes</td><td>Tenteis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Tíente</td><td>Tíenten</td></tr> </table>	que Yotiente, that I may	Tentemos	Tiéntes	Tenteis	Tíente	Tíenten
que Yotiente, that I may	Tentemos						
Tiéntes	Tenteis						
Tíente	Tíenten						
	<p>otherwise they are conjugated as Revelár.</p>						

The Verb *Andár*, to go, or to go about, has the preterperfect of the indicative irregular ; and generally when such tense is irregular, the first and the second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

Andúve	Si, Anduviéra	Anduviéssse	qu. anduviére,
Anduviste	Anduviéras, Anduviéssses		Anduviéres.
Andúvo	Anduviéra, Anduviéssse		Anduviére
Anduvimos	Anduviéramos, Anduviésssemos	anduviéremos	
Anduvistéis,	Anduviéradeis, Anduviéssades	anduviéredes	
Anduviéron	Anduviéran, Anduviéssen	anduviéren	

in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.

Of the Verbs Passive

Of the First Conjugation:

VERBS Passive are formed in Spanish from the Active, by the auxiliary Verb, and the Participle Passive of the Preterperfect Tense, following always the Moods and Tenses of the Verb *Sér*, as

Sér amado, to be beloved.

Present

Indicative.**Present Tense.**

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{sói} \\ \text{éres} \\ \text{es} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ am beloved} \\ \text{Thou are beloved} \\ \text{He is beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{somos} \\ \text{sóis} \\ \text{son} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} We \text{ are beloved} \\ \text{Ye are beloved} \\ \text{They are beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éra} \\ \text{éras} \\ \text{éra} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ was beloved} \\ \text{Thou was beloved} \\ \text{He was beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éramos} \\ \text{éradeis} \\ \text{éran} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} We \text{ were beloved} \\ \text{Ye were beloved} \\ \text{They were beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Preterperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fui, or he sido} \\ \text{fuiste, or has sido} \\ \text{fue, or ha sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ have been beloved} \\ \text{Thou has been beloved} \\ \text{He bath been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fuimos, or hémos sido} \\ \text{fuisteis, or havéis sido} \\ \text{fueron, or han sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} We \text{ have been beloved} \\ \text{Ye have been beloved} \\ \text{They have been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havía sido} \\ \text{Havías sido} \\ \text{Havía sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ had been beloved} \\ \text{Thou hadst been beloved} \\ \text{He had been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
Plur.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havíamos sido} \\ \text{Havíadeis sido} \\ \text{Havían sido} \end{array} \right\}$	amádos	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} We \text{ had been beloved} \\ \text{Ye had been beloved} \\ \text{They had been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

Future.

Seré amado, &c.

I shall be beloved

And so throughout other Moods and Tenses.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

THE reciprocal Verbs are all terminated in *se* in the infinitive Mood, as *Acostárse* to lie down, or to grow near, or to come near; *Levantárse*, to rise up; *Librárse*, to discharge one's self, to make one's self free, &c. and are conjugated thus:

Adelantárse, to go before, to rise up to a Dignity or to Preferment.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Me adelánto Te adelantas Se adelánta Nos adelantámos	} I go before, &c.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantáis Se adelántan	

Imperfect.

Sing.	{ Me adelantába Te adelantábas Se adelantába Nos adelantábamos	} I did go before, &c.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantábadeis Se adelantában	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me adelanté Te adelantáste Se adelantó Nos adelantámos	} I averse before.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os adelantásteis Se adelantaron	

I

Second

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Me he Te has Se ha Nos hemos	{ Adelantado	{ I have gone before.
Plur.	{ Vos, or os havéis Se han		

And so in all the Tenses and Moods, but in the Imperative thus :

Sing.	{ Adelántate tu Adelántate el	{ } Go thou before, &c.
Plur.	{ Adelantemosnos nosotros Adelantados vosotros Adelántense aquellos.	

The Verb *Pesárse*, to be sorry, is conjugated thus :

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Pésame, or à mí me pésá,	I am sorry
	{ Pésate, or à ti te pésá,	Thou art sorry
	{ Pésale, or à el le pésá,	He is sorry
	{ Pésanos, or à nosotros nos pésá,	We are sorry
Plur.	{ Pésaos, or à vosotros os pésá,	Ye are sorry
	{ Pésales, or à ellos les pésá,	They are sorry.

And so throughout all other Tenses ; but in the Imperative Mood thus :

Sing.	{ Pésete, Pésele,	Be thou sorry
	{ Pésenos,	Let him be sorry
Plur.	{ Péseos, Péseles,	Let us be sorry
		Be ye sorry

	{ Péseles,	Let them be sorry
--	------------	-------------------

Of Verbs Impersonals belonging to the first Conjugation.

THE Spanish Impersonals, like the Latin, want the first and second Persons, and are declined only in the third Person, throughout all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Impersonals some are Active, and some Passive;
The Active are conjugated thus:

Nevár To snow.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Niéva, It snows.

Imperfect.

Nevába, It did snow.

First Preterperfect.

Nevó, It snored.

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Há, or húvo nevádo, It hath snowed.

Plusperfect.

Haviá nevádo, It had snowed.

Future.

Neverá,	<i>It will snow.</i>
Que niéve,	<i>Let it snow.</i>
Será bueno que nieve,	<i>It will be good if that it snow.</i>
Si nevará, neváse, or nevaría,	<i>If it would snow.</i>
Quando haya nevado,	<i>When it hath snowed.</i>
Si huviéra, or huviéssie nevado,	<i>If it had snowed.</i>
Quando nevare,	<i>When it shall snow</i>
Nevando,	<i>Snowing.</i>
Los Campos están nevados,	<i>The Fields are cover'd with snow.</i>
Niéve, a Noun,	<i>The snow.</i>

In this manner are conjugated the following Verbs :

Atronár, or tronár, *to thunder*
 Granizár, or apedreár, *to hail*
 Helár, *to freeze*
 Relampageár, *to lighten*
 Ahumár, *to smoak*
 Constár, *to be plain, or clear*
 Importár, *to import, to be convenient*

The passive Impersonals are conjugated with the Particle *se* before or after the Verb, as

Se cuénta, *It is said, it is told, it is related, it is reported.*
 Se contába, *It was said.*

Se contó
 Se ha, or húvo contado } *It hath been said.*

Se havía contado, *It had been said.*

Se contará, *It will be said.*

And so throughout all other Tenses and Moods.

N. B. That all the Verbs regular, or irregular, personals, or impersonals, except the regular passive, may be otherwise conjugated by the auxiliary Verb *Estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb, through all the Tenses and Moods, as

Present.

Present. Indicative.

Sing.	{	ámo, or estoy amando,	<i>I love, or I am loving, &c.</i>
		ámas, or estás amando	
		áma, or está amando	
		amámos, or estámos amando	
Plur.	{	amáis, or estáis amando	
		áman, or están amando	

Imperfect.

Amaba, or estaba amando,

I was loving

Perfect.

Amé, or estuve amando,

I did love, &c.

Llamo, or estoy llamando

I call, or am calling

Hablo, or estoy hablando,

I speak, or am speaking, &c.

The same is to be observed in all the Conjugations.

It must be observed here, that there are some Nouns called Verbals, for their being derived from the Verbs; in *Latin* those are terminated generally in *bilis*, in *tor*, and *ix*, and in *Spanish* in *ble*, *dor*, and *iz*: as

<i>Latin.</i>		<i>Spaniſh.</i>
<i>bilis</i>	{	Amabilis
<i>tor</i>	{	Amator
<i>ix</i>	{	Amatrix
		<i>ble</i> { Amable
		<i>dor</i> { Amadór
		<i>iz</i> { Amatriz, or amadóra.

But note, That there are some *Spanish* Verbs which are defectives in this particular, as well as some *Latin* Verbs.

Of Verbs Regular of the second Conjugation, in er.

Respondér, *To answer.*

Indicative Mood,

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Respón-do, Respón-de, Respón-de, Respón-de-mos,	I an-swer You an-swer He an-swers We an-swer
Plur.	{ Respón-de-is Respón-de-n,	Ye an-swer They an-swer

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Respondía, Respondías, Respondía, Respondíamós,	I did an-swer, or I was an-swing-ing. You did an-swer He did an-swer We did an-swer
Plur.	{ Respondíadeis, Respondían,	Ye did an-swer They did an-swer

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Respondí, Respondíste, Respondió, Respondímos,	I an-swered You an-swered He an-swered We an-swered
Plur.	{ Respondídeis, Respondiéron,	Ye an-swered They an-swered

Second

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or</i> húve <i>Has, or</i> huvisté <i>Ha, or</i> húvo	<i>Hémos, havémos, or</i> <i>huvímos</i>	<i>Respondido,</i>	<i>I have answered</i> <i>You have answered</i> <i>He has answered</i> <i>We have answered</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Havéis, or</i> huvísteis <i>Han, or</i> huviéron			<i>Ye have answered</i> <i>They have answered</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Havía</i> <i>Havías</i> <i>Havia</i>	<i>Havíamos</i>	<i>Respondido,</i>	<i>I had answered, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Havíadeis</i> <i>Havían</i>			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Responderé,</i> <i>Responderás,</i> <i>Responderá,</i>	<i>Responde</i>	<i>I shall, or will answer, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Responderémos,</i> <i>Responderéis,</i> <i>Responderán,</i>		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or</i> Téngo de respondér, <i>Has de respondér</i>	<i>Responde</i>	<i>I am, to or must answer, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Ha de respondér,</i> <i>Hémos, or</i> havémos de respondér <i>Havéis de respondér,</i> <i>Han de respondér,</i>		

Third Future.

Sing. Havré de respondér, *I shall be oblig'd to answer.*

Fourth Future.

Sing. Havía de respondér,*I was to answer.*

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Respónde tu, Reipónda el,	<i>Do you answer, or answer thou</i> <i>Let him answer</i>
	{ Respondámos n ^s	<i>Let us answer.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Respondéed v ^t Respóndan ellos	<i>Do ye answer, or let you answer</i> <i>Let them answer</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
 { When, God grant, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Respónda, Respóndas, Respónda, Respondámos,	{ When, or God grant I do answer, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Respondáis Respóndan,	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Respondiéra, respondiéssse, or respondería, Respondíeras, respondiéssses, or responderías, Respondiéra, respondiéssse, or respondería Respondíeramos, respondiéssedeis, or responderíamos	{ When, or God grant I did answer, &c.
	Respondíerais, or respondiéssemos, or responderíadeis	
	Respondíeran, respondiéssen, or responderían.	

Preter.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	Respondido,	<i>When, or would to God, &c. I have answered, &c.</i>
Plur.	Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé	Respon- dido,	<i>When, or would to God I had answered, &c.</i>
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	Respondiére, Respondiéres, Respondiére, Respondiéremos,	When, or God grant I shall, or will answer, &c.
Plur.	Respondiéredeis, Respondiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	Respondido,	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have answered, &c.</i>
Plur.	Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Responder,

To answer.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér respondido; *To have answered.*

Future Tense.

Havér de respondér, *To be to answer.*

Gerund.

Respondiéndo, *Answering.*

Participle Active.

Respondiente, or el que responde, *Answering.*

Participle Passive.

Respondido, *Answered, &c.*

All other regular Verbs of the second Conjugation in *er*, are conjugated after the same manner ; of which take the following List :

Verbs conjugated as Respondér,

C orrespondér, <i>to correspond.</i>	Metér, <i>to put in.</i>
Comér, <i>to eat.</i>	Prometér, <i>to promise.</i>
Bebér, <i>to drink.</i>	Ofendér, <i>to offend.</i>
Reprehendér, <i>to reprove.</i>	Escondér, <i>to hide.</i>
Barrér, <i>to sweep.</i>	Aprendér, <i>to learn.</i>
Vendér, <i>to sell.</i>	Temér, <i>to fear.</i>
Concedér, <i>to grant.</i>	Emprendér, <i>to undertake.</i>
Acometér, <i>to attack.</i>	Debér, <i>to owe.</i>
Corré, <i>to run.</i>	Cometér, <i>to commit.</i>

Of

Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in er, as,

Trahér, *to bring.*
 Sabér, *to know.*
 Tenér, *to have.*
 Podér, *to be able.*
 Querér, *to will or love.*

Ponér, *to put.*
 Hacér, *to do.*
 Cabér, *to be contained.*
 Ver, *to see.*

Trahér, *To fetch or bring.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo tráhigo Tu tráhes El tráhe	I fetch or bring You fetch or bring He fetches or brings
Plur.	Nosótros trahémos Vosótros trahéis Ellos tráhen	We fetch or bring Ye fetch or bring They fetch or bring.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Trahía Trahías Trahia	I did fetch or bring You did fetch or bring He did fetch or bring
Plur.	Trahíamos Trahíais Trahían	We did fetch or bring Ye did fetch or bring They did fetch or bring.

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Tráxe, or trúxe Traxiste, or truxiste	I have fetcht or brought You have fetcht or brought
Plur.	Tráxo, or trúxo Tráximos, or truxímos	He hath fetcht or brought We have fetcht or brought
	Traxisteis, or truxísteis Traxéron, or truxéron	Ye have fetcht or brought They have fetcht or brought

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hé, or húve</i>	<i>Trahido,</i>	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
	<i>Has</i>		
	<i>Ha</i>	<i>Trahido,</i>	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hémos, or havémos</i>		
	<i>Havéis</i>		
	<i>Han</i>		

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Havía</i>	<i>Trahido,</i>	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
	<i>Havías</i>		
	<i>Havía</i>	<i>Trahido,</i>	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Haviámos</i>		
	<i>Haviadeis</i>		
	<i>Havian</i>		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Traheré</i>	<i>I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.</i>
	<i>Traherás</i>	
	<i>Traherá</i>	<i>I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Traherémos</i>	
	<i>Traheréis</i>	
	<i>Traherán</i>	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or téngo de trahér</i>	<i>I am to or must fetch or bring, &c.</i>
	<i>Has de trahér</i>	
	<i>Ha de trahér</i>	<i>I am to or must fetch or bring, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hémos, or havémos de trahér</i>	
	<i>Hayéis de trahér</i>	
	<i>Han de trahér</i>	

The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Tráhe tu,</i>	<i>Bring or fetch thou</i>
	<i>Tráhiga el,</i>	<i>Let him bring or fetch</i>

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Trahígámos nosóetros,</td><td><i>Let us bring or fetch</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Trahédes vosóetros,</td><td><i>Do ye bring or fetch</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Tráhigan éllos</td><td><i>Let them bring or fetch</i></td></tr> </table>	Trahígámos nosóetros,	<i>Let us bring or fetch</i>	Trahédes vosóetros,	<i>Do ye bring or fetch</i>	Tráhigan éllos	<i>Let them bring or fetch</i>
Trahígámos nosóetros,	<i>Let us bring or fetch</i>						
Trahédes vosóetros,	<i>Do ye bring or fetch</i>						
Tráhigan éllos	<i>Let them bring or fetch</i>						

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá.

When, God grant, would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Tráhiga</td><td rowspan="2">When or would to God I do bring</td></tr> <tr> <td>Tráhigas</td></tr> </table>	Tráhiga	When or would to God I do bring	Tráhigas
Tráhiga	When or would to God I do bring			
Tráhigas				
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Tráhiga</td><td rowspan="2">or fetch, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Trahígámos</td></tr> </table>	Tráhiga	or fetch, &c.	Trahígámos
Tráhiga	or fetch, &c.			
Trahígámos				
	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Trahigáis</td><td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Tráhigan</td></tr> </table>	Trahigáis		Tráhigan
Trahigáis				
Tráhigan				

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Truxéra, truxéssle, trahería</td><td rowspan="2">When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Truxéras, truxéssles, traherías</td></tr> </table>	Truxéra, truxéssle, trahería	When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &c.	Truxéras, truxéssles, traherías
Truxéra, truxéssle, trahería	When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &c.			
Truxéras, truxéssles, traherías				
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Truxéra, truxéssle, trahería</td><td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Truxéraramos, truxésslemos, traheríamos</td></tr> </table>	Truxéra, truxéssle, trahería		Truxéraramos, truxésslemos, traheríamos
Truxéra, truxéssle, trahería				
Truxéraramos, truxésslemos, traheríamos				
	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Truxéradeis, truxéssledeis, traheríadeis</td><td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían</td></tr> </table>	Truxéradeis, truxéssledeis, traheríadeis		Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían
Truxéradeis, truxéssledeis, traheríadeis				
Truxéran, truxéssen, traherían				

The first and second may be conjugated by Traxéra, and Traxéssle.

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Háya</td><td rowspan="2">Trahido, When, or would to God have brought or fetcht, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Háyas</td></tr> </table>	Háya	Trahido, When, or would to God have brought or fetcht, &c.	Háyas
Háya	Trahido, When, or would to God have brought or fetcht, &c.			
Háyas				
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Háya</td><td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Hayámos</td></tr> </table>	Háya		Hayámos
Háya				
Hayámos				
	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Hayáis</td><td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Hyan</td></tr> </table>	Hayáis		Hyan
Hayáis				
Hyan				

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviéra, or huviéſſe</i>	}	Trahido,	When, or would to God bad brought or fetcht; &c.
	<i>Huviéſſas, or huviéſſes</i>			
	<i>Huviéra, or huviéſſe</i>			
	<i>Huviéſſamos, or huviéſſemos</i>			
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéſſadeis, or huviéſſedeis</i>			
	<i>Huviéſſan, or huviéſſen</i>			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Traxére, or truxére</i>	}	Trahido,	When, or God grant I shall fetch or bring, &c.
	<i>Traxéſſes, or truxéſſes</i>			
	<i>Traxére, or truxére</i>			
	<i>Traxéſſemos, or truxéſſemos</i>			
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Traxéſſadeis, or truxéſſedeis</i>			
	<i>Traxéſſen, or truxéſſen</i>			

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviéra, or havré</i>	}	Trahido,	When, or God grant I may, or shall have brought or fetcht, c.
	<i>Huviéſſes</i>			
	<i>Huviéra</i>			
	<i>Huviéſſemos</i>			
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéſſadeis</i>			
	<i>Huviéſſen</i>			

Infinitive Mood,**Present.**

Trahér, *To bring, or fetch.*

Preterperfect.

Havér trahido, *To have brought, or fetch'd.*

Future.

Havér, or esperár de trahér *To bring, or fetch hereafter.*

Gerund.

Trahiendo,

Bringing, or fetching.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Traído

Brought, or fetch'd, &c.

The same manner of Conjugation is to be observed in all Verbs compounded of *Trabér*, as *Retrabér*, to draw back, &c.

The Irregular Verb Sabér, To know.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo sé,	I know
	Tu sabes,	You know
	El sabe,	He knows
	Sabemos,	We know
Plur.	Sabéis	Ye know
	Sáben,	They know

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Sabía,	I did know
	Sabías,	You did know
	Sabía,	He did know
	Sabíamos,	We did know
Plur.	Sabiadeis	Ye did know
	Sabían,	They did know

First

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Súpe,</i> <i>Súpiste,</i> <i>Súpo,</i> <i>Súpimos,</i>	<i>I knew</i> <i>You knew</i> <i>He knew</i> <i>We knew</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Supísteis</i> <i>Supiéron,</i>	<i>Ye knew</i> <i>They knew</i>

Second and third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or húve sabido</i> <i>Has sabido,</i> <i>Ha sabido,</i>	<i>I have known</i> <i>You have known</i> <i>He has known</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hémos sabido,</i> <i>Havéis sabido,</i> <i>Han sabido,</i>	<i>We have known</i> <i>Ye have known</i> <i>They have known</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Havia</i> <i>Havías</i> <i>Havía</i>	<i>I had known</i> <i>You had known</i> <i>He had known</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Havíamos</i> <i>Haviadeis</i> <i>Havian</i>	<i>We had known</i> <i>Ye had known</i> <i>They had known</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Sabré,</i> <i>Sabrás,</i> <i>Sabrá,</i>	<i>I shall, or will know</i> <i>You shall, or will know</i> <i>He shall, or will know</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Sabrémos,</i> <i>Sabréis,</i> <i>Sabrán,</i>	<i>We shall, or will know</i> <i>Ye shall, or will know</i> <i>They shall, or will know</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He, or Tengo de sabér,</i> <i>Has de sabér,</i> <i>Ha de sabér,</i>	<i>I am to know</i> <i>You are to know</i> <i>He is to know</i>
<i>Plur.</i>		

<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Hémos de fabér</td><td><i>We are to know</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Havéis de fabér</td><td><i>Ye are to know</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Han de fabér</td><td><i>They are to know</i></td></tr> </table>	Hémos de fabér	<i>We are to know</i>	Havéis de fabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>	Han de fabér	<i>They are to know</i>
Hémos de fabér	<i>We are to know</i>						
Havéis de fabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>						
Han de fabér	<i>They are to know</i>						

Third Future.

Havré de fabér *I shall be oblig'd to know*

Fourth Future.

Havia de fabér *I was to know*

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Sábe tu</td><td><i>Know you</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépa el</td><td><i>Let him know</i></td></tr> </table>	Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>	Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>		
Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>						
Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Sepámos nosóttos</td><td><i>Let us know</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sabéd vosótros</td><td><i>Know ye</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépan éllos</td><td><i>Let them know</i></td></tr> </table>	Sepámos nosóttos	<i>Let us know</i>	Sabéd vosótros	<i>Know ye</i>	Sépan éllos	<i>Let them know</i>
Sepámos nosóttos	<i>Let us know</i>						
Sabéd vosótros	<i>Know ye</i>						
Sépan éllos	<i>Let them know</i>						

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá,
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Sépa</td><td rowspan="4"><i>God grant that I may know.</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépas</td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépa</td></tr> <tr> <td>Sepámos</td></tr> </table>	Sépa	<i>God grant that I may know.</i>	Sépas	Sépa	Sepámos
Sépa	<i>God grant that I may know.</i>					
Sépas						
Sépa						
Sepámos						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Sepáis</td> <td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Sépan</td></tr> </table>	Sepáis		Sépan		
Sepáis						
Sépan						

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Supiéra, supiéssie, fabría Supiéras, supiésses, fabriás Supiéra, supiéssie, fabría	When, or God grant I did know, &c.
	Supiéramos, supiéssemos, fabriamos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Supiéradeis, supiéssedeis, fabriadeis	
	Supiéran, supiéssen, fabrian	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Haya sabido Hayas sabido Haya sabido	When, or God grant I have known, &c.
	Hayámos sabido	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayáis sabido	
	Hayan sabido	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéssie Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssie	Sabido, { When, or would to God I had known, &c.
	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Supiére Supiéres	When, or God grant I shall know, &c.
	Supiére	
	Supiéremos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Supiéredeis	
	Supiéren	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres,	Sabido { When, or God grant I shall have known, &c.
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sabér *To know*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér sabido *To have known*

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperár de sabér *To know hereafter*

Gerund.

Sabiéndo *Knowing*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sabe *Knowing*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Sabido *Known*

The Irregular Verb Tenér, To have, or hold.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing. { Téngo
 { Tiénes
 { Tiéne

I have, or hold
You have, or holds
He has, or holds

K 2

Plur.

132 The RUDIMENT S of

<i>Plur.</i>	Tenémos Tenéis Tiénen	<i>We have, or bold</i> <i>Ye have, or bold</i> <i>They have, or bold</i>
--------------	-----------------------------	---

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Tenía Tenías Tenía Teníamos	<i>I did have, or bold,</i> <i>&c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Teníadeis Tenian	

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Túve Tuviste Túvo Tuvimos	<i>I had, or held</i> <i>You had, or held</i> <i>He had, or held</i> <i>We had, or held</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Tuvisteis Tuvieron	<i>Ye had, or held</i> <i>They had, or held</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, or húve tenido Has tenido Ha tenido	<i>I have bad</i> <i>You have bad</i> <i>He has bad</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Hémos tenido Havéis tenido Han tenido	<i>We have bad</i> <i>Ye have bad</i> <i>They have bad</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	<i>Tenido</i>	<i>I had had</i> <i>You had had</i> <i>He had had</i> <i>We had had</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Haviadeis Havían		<i>Ye had had</i> <i>They had had</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Tendré terné, or tenré Tendrás ternás, or terrás Tendrá terná, or tenrá	<i>I shall, or will have</i> <i>You shall, or will have</i> <i>He shall, or will have</i>
		<i>Plur.</i>

the SPANISH GRAMMAR. 133

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Tendrémos</i> ternémos, or <i>tenrémos</i>	<i>We shall</i> , or <i>will have</i>
	<i>Tendréis</i> ternéis, or <i>tenréis</i>	<i>Ye shall</i> , or <i>will have</i>
	<i>Tendrán</i> ternán, or <i>tenrán</i>	<i>They shall</i> , or <i>will have</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He de tener</i>	<i>I am to have, or bold</i>
	<i>Has de tener</i>	<i>You are to have, or bold</i>
	<i>Ha de tener</i>	<i>He is to have, or bold</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hémos de tener</i>	<i>We are to have, or bold</i>
	<i>Havéis de tener</i>	<i>Ye are to have, or bold</i>
	<i>Han de tener</i>	<i>They are to have, or bold</i>

Third Future.

<i>Havré de tener</i>	<i>I shall be oblig'd to have or bold</i>
-----------------------	---

Fourth Future.

<i>Havía de tener</i>	<i>I was to have</i>
-----------------------	----------------------

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Ten tu</i>	<i>Do thou have, or bold thou</i>
	<i>Ténga el</i>	<i>Let him have, or bold</i>
	<i>Tengámos nosótrous</i>	<i>Let us have, or bold</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Tened vosótrous</i>	<i>Do ye have, or bold, or let ye bold</i>
	<i>Téngan ellos</i>	<i>Let them have, or bold</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.

When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Ténga</i>	<i>When, or God grant I do have, or bold, &c.</i>
	<i>Téngas</i>	
	<i>Ténga</i>	
	<i>Tengámos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Tengáis</i>	
	<i>Téngan</i>	

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	When, or would to God I did have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéras, tuviéſſes, ternías, or tendrías	
	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	
	Tuviéramos, tuviéſſemos, ternía- mos, or tendríamos	
<i>Plur.</i>	Tuviéradeis, tuviéſſedeis, ternía- mos, or tendriadeis	
	Tuviéran, tuviéſſen, ternian, or tendrían	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Haya tenido	When, or God grant I have bad, or held, &c.
	Hayas tenido	
	Haya tenido	
	Hayámos tenido	
<i>Plur.</i>	Hayáis tenido	
	Hayan tenido	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	Tenido, { When, or would to God I had bad, or held &c.
	Huviéras, or huviéſſes	
	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	
	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéſſen	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Tuviére	When, or God grant I shall have or hold, &c.
	Tuviéres	
	Tuviére	
	Tuviéremos	
	Tuviéredeis	
<i>Plur.</i>	Tuviérén	

Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos Huviéredes Huviéren	Tenido,	When, or God grant <i>I shall have had</i> or held, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>			

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Tenér	<i>To have or to hold.</i>
-------	----------------------------

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér tenido	<i>To have had or held</i>
--------------	----------------------------

Future Tense.

Havér de tenér	<i>To be to have or hold</i>
----------------	------------------------------

Gerund.

Teniéndo	<i>Holding</i>
----------	----------------

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que tiéne	<i>Holding</i>
--------------	----------------

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Tenido	<i>Held</i>
--------	-------------

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all points declined, thro' all Moods and Tenses, as Mantenér, *to maintain*; Yo manténgo, *I maintain*, mantuve, *I maintained*. Detenér, *to detain or stay*; Detengo, *I detain*; detuve, *I detained*. Retenér,

136 *The RUDIMENT S* of
Retenér, to retain or withhold; Reténgó, I retain; retúve, I
Sostenér, to sustain or uphold; Sosténgó, I sustain; sostúve, I
retained
sustained

The Irregular Verb Podér, To be able.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Puedo Puédes Puéde Podemos Podéis Puéden	I can, or am able You can, or are able He can, or is able We can, or are able Ye can, or are able They can, or are able
-------	---	--

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Podía Podías Podía Podíamos Podíadeis Podían	I could, or was able You could, or was able He could, or was able We could, or were able Ye could, or were able They could, or were able
-------	---	---

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Pude Pudiste Púdo Pudimos Pudisteis Pudieron	{ I could, or have been able, &c.
Plur.		

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	Hé, or húve Has Ha	Podido,	I could, or have been able You could, or have been able He could, or has been able We could, or have been able
Plur.	Hémos, or havémos Havéis Han		Ye could, or have been able They could, or have been able

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia Havias Havia Havíamos	Podido,	I had been able, &c.
Plur.	Haviadeis Havian		

First Future.

Sing.	Podré Podrás Podrá Podrémos	I shall, or will be able, &c.
Plur.	Podréis Podrán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or téngo de podér Has de podér Ha de podér	I must, or will be able, &c.
Plur.	Hémos, or havémos de podér	
	Havéis de podér Han de podér	

Third Future.

Havré de podér

I shall be obliged to be able

Fourth Future.

Havia de podér

I was to be able

Though

Though it seems improper for this Word to have a second, third, and fourth Futures of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative Mood, and most Grammarians will allow it neither, yet they are frequently and properly used. As to the second Future, it is very usual, and when one says, he cannot do such a thing, to answer, *Has de podér*, You shall be able ; by way of compelling slothful persons, or such as may improve by often trying to do that which they cannot do at present. The same is to be said of the Imperative, which is in the nature of the second future, being compulsive ; as, if one say, *No podémos hacér ésto*, We cannot do this ; and another answers, *Pués podámos*, Then let us be able ; that is, let us use our Endeavours, that we may perform that which we think we cannot do. Therefore we will proceed to the

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Puéde tu Puéda el	<i>Do you be able Let him be able</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Podámos nosótros Podéd vosotros Puédan ellos	<i>Let us be able Do ye be able Let them be able</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood, with the Signs,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Puéda Puédas Puéda Podámos	{ When, or God grant I can, or be able, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Podáis Puédan	

Preter-

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Pudiéra, pudiésse, podría Pudiéras, pudiésses, podrías Pudiéra, pudiésse, podría	When, or would to God I could or might be able, &c.
	{ Pudiéramos, pudiéssemos, podríamos	
	{ Pudiéradeis, pudiéssedeis, podríadeis	
<i>Plur.</i>	Pudiéran, pudiéssen, podrían	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	Podido, { When, or would to God, &c. I have been able, &c.
	{ Hayáis Hyan	
<i>Plur.</i>		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huvieras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviésse	Podido, { When, or would to God I had been able, &c.
	{ Huvieramos, or huviéssemos	
	{ Huvieradeis, or huviéssedeis	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huvieran, or huviéßen	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Pudiére Pudiéres Pudiére Pudiéremos	When, or God grant I shall, or may be able, &c.
	{ Pudiéredeis	
	Pudiéren	
<i>Plur.</i>		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huvieres Huviére	Podido, { When, or God grant I may, or shall have been able, &c.
	{ Huviéremos	
	{ Huviéredeis	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Podér

To be able

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér podido

To have been able

Gerund.

Pudiéndo,

*Being able, &c.**The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, or love.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Yo quiero	I will, or love
	Tu quierés	You will, or love
	El quiere	He wills, or loves
Plur.	Nosotros queremos	We will, or love
	Vosotros queréis	Ye will, or love
	Ellos quieren	They will, or love

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Quería,	I did will, or love
	Querías	You did will, or love
	Queria	He did will, or love
Plur.	Queríamos	We did will, or love
	Queríadeís	Ye did will, or love
	Querian	They did will, or love.

First

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quisé Quisiste Quiso Quisimos	<i>I willed, or loved</i> <i>You willed, or loved</i> <i>He willed, or loved</i> <i>We willed, or loved</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quisisteis Quisieron	<i>Ye willed, or loved</i> <i>They willed, or loved</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or húve Has Ha	{ Querido,	{ I have willed, or loved, &c.
	{ Hemos, or havemos		
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haveis	{ Han	{ Han
	{ Han		

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havia Havias Havia Haviamos	{ Querido,	{ I had willed, or loved, &c.
	{ Haviadeis		
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havian	{ Han	{ Han
	{ Han		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Querré Querrás Querrá Querrémos	{ I will, or shall will, or love, &c.
	{ Querreis Querrán	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Querrán	{ Han
	{ Han	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or téngo de querér Has de querér Ha de querér	{ I am to, or must will, or love, &c.
	{ Hemos, or havemos de querér	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haveis de querér	{ Han
	{ Han de querér	

Third

Third Future.**Havré de querér***I shall be obliged to love***Pourth Future.****Havia de querér***I had, or I was to love***Imperative Mood.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quiére tu Quiéra el	<i>Do you will, or love Let him will, or love</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Querámos nosotros Queréd vosotros Quieran ellos	<i>Let us will, or love Do ye will, or love Let them will, or love</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, would to God,

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quiéra Quiéras Quiéra Querámos	<i>When, or God grant I will or love, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Queráis Quiéran	

Three Preterimperfect Tenses.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quisiéra, quisésse, querría Quisiéras, quisésses, querriás	<i>When, or God grant I would or did love, &c.</i>
	{ Quisiéra, quisésse, querría	
	{ Quisiéramos, quisiéssemos, querriámos	
	{ Quisiéradeis, quisiéssedeis, querriadeis	
	Quisiéran, quisiéssen, querrián	

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	Háy় Háyas Háya Hayámos	Querido,	When, or God grant I have will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéffe	Querido	When, or would to God I had will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviésfemos Huviéradeis, or huviésfedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	Quifiére Quifiéres Quifiére Quifiéremos	Querido	When, or God grant I shall will, or love, &c.
Plur.	Quifiéredeis Quifiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	Querido	When, or God grant I shall be willing, or love, &c.
Plur.	Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Querér

To will, or love

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Havér querido

*To have will'd, or lov'd***Gerund.**

Queriéndo

*Loving***Participle.**

Querido

Will'd, or lov'd, &c.

This Verb may be declined through all Moods and Tenses with the word *Mas* added to it, which with it sometimes signifies *rather*, and sometimes *more*, as *Mas quíero callár que bablár mal*, I had rather be silent than speak ill; or *Mas quíero a Pédro que a Juán*, I love Peter more, or better than John.

The Irregular Verb Ponér, To put, or place.**Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

Sing.	Yo pongo Tu pones El pone	Plur.	Ponemos Ponéis Pónen	I put, or place, &c.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Ponía Ponías Ponia
-------	--------------------------

*I did put
You did put
He did put*

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Poníamos</td><td>We did put</td></tr> <tr> <td>Poniadeis</td><td>Ye did put</td></tr> <tr> <td>Ponían</td><td>They did put</td></tr> </table>	Poníamos	We did put	Poniadeis	Ye did put	Ponían	They did put
Poníamos	We did put						
Poniadeis	Ye did put						
Ponían	They did put						

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Púse</td><td rowspan="4">I have put, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Pusíste</td></tr> <tr> <td>Púso</td></tr> <tr> <td>Pusimos</td></tr> </table>	Púse	I have put, &c.	Pusíste	Púso	Pusimos
Púse	I have put, &c.					
Pusíste						
Púso						
Pusimos						
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Pusísteis</td> <td rowspan="2"></td></tr> <tr> <td>Pusieron</td></tr> </table>	Pusísteis		Pusieron		
Pusísteis						
Pusieron						

Second Preterperfect.

Sing. He, or húve Puésto, *I have put, &c.*

Preterpluperfect.

Sing. Havía Puésto, *I bad put, &c.*

First Future.

Sing. Pondré, or porné *I shall, or will put, &c.*

Second Future.

Sing. He, or Téngo de ponér *I am to, or must put, &c.*

Third Future.

Havré de ponér *I shall be oblig'd to put*
Havía de ponér *I had, or I was to put*

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Pon tu</td><td><i>Do you put, or put thou</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Pónga el</td><td><i>Let him put</i></td></tr> </table>	Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>	Pónga el	<i>Let him put</i>
Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>				
Pónga el	<i>Let him put</i>				
	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Pongámos nosotros</td><td><i>Let us put</i></td></tr> </table>	Pongámos nosotros	<i>Let us put</i>		
Pongámos nosotros	<i>Let us put</i>				
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Ponéd vosotros</td><td><i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i></td></tr> <tr> <td>Póngan ellos</td><td><i>Let them put</i></td></tr> </table>	Ponéd vosotros	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>	Póngan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>
Ponéd vosotros	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>				
Póngan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>				

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Pónga Póngas Póngá Pongámos	}	<i>When, or God grant I do put, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ Pongáis Póngan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Pusiéra, pusiéssé, or pornía, pondría Pusiéras, pusiésses, or pornías, pondrías Pusiéra, pusiéssé, or pornía, pondría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did put, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ Pusiéramos, pusiéssemos, or porníamos, pondríamos Pusiéradeis, pusiéssedeis, or porníadeis Pusiérán, pusiéssen, or pornían, pondrian		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya Hayas Haya Hayámos	Puésto,	{ <i>When, or God grant I have put, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ Hayáis Háyan		

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssé</i>	}	Puésto,	<i>When, or would to God I had put, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéras, or huviésses</i>			
	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssé</i>			
	<i>Huviéramos, or huviéssémos</i>			
Plur.	<i>Huviéradeis, or huviéssedes</i>			
	<i>Huviéran, or huviéssen</i>			

First Future.

Sing.	<i>Pusiére</i>	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall put, &c.</i>
	<i>Pusiéres</i>		
	<i>Pusiére</i>		
	<i>Pusiéremos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Pusiéredeis</i>		
	<i>Pusiéron</i>		

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>Huviére, or havré</i>	}	Puésto,	<i>When, or God grant I shall have put, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéres</i>			
	<i>Huviére</i>			
	<i>Huviéremos</i>			
Plur.	<i>Huviéredeis</i>			
	<i>Huviéren</i>			

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ponér,

To put

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér puésto;

To have put

Gerund.

Poniéndo,

Putting

Participle Passive.

Puéstos

Put, &c.

After this manner are declined in all respects, *Componér*, to compose, *yo compóngo*, I compose, *compúse*, I have composed; *Disponér*, to dispose, *dispóngo*, I dispose, *dispúse*, I have disposed; *Anteponér*, to set before, *antepóngo*, I set before, *antepúse*, I have set before; *Propóner*, to propose, *propóngo*, I propose, *propúse*, I proposed; and, if there be any other Verbs derived by Composition from *Ponér*.

The Irregular Verb Hacér, To do, or make.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Yo hágoo</i>	<i>I do or make</i>
	<i>Tu hágas</i>	<i>You do or make</i>
	<i>El hág</i>	<i>He does or makes</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hacémos</i>	<i>We do or make</i>
	<i>Hacéis</i>	<i>Ye do or make</i>
	<i>Hácen</i>	<i>They do or make</i>

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hacía</i>	<i>I did or made, &c.</i>
	<i>Hacías</i>	
	<i>Hacía</i>	
	<i>Hacíamos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Haciadeis, or hacíais</i>	
	<i>Hacían</i>	

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hice</i>	<i>I have made, &c.</i>
	<i>Hiciste</i>	
	<i>Hizo</i>	

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Hicimos</td><td rowspan="3">{</td><td rowspan="3">We have made, &c.</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hicisteis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hicieron</td></tr> </table>	Hicimos	{	We have made, &c.	Hicisteis	Hicieron	{
Hicimos	{	We have made, &c.					
Hicisteis							
Hicieron							

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>He, or húve</td><td rowspan="2">{</td><td rowspan="7">Hécho,</td><td rowspan="7">{</td></tr> <tr> <td>Has</td></tr> </table>	He, or húve	{	Hécho,	{	Has	{	{	
He, or húve	{	Hécho,				{			
Has									
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Ha</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hémos, or havémos</td></tr> <tr> <td>Havéis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Han</td></tr> </table>		Ha				Hémos, or havémos	Havéis	Han
Ha									
Hémos, or havémos									
Havéis									
Han									

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Havía</td><td rowspan="2">{</td><td rowspan="7">Hécho,</td><td rowspan="7">{</td></tr> <tr> <td>Havías</td></tr> </table>	Havía	{	Hécho,	{	Havías	{	{	
Havía	{	Hécho,				{			
Havías									
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Havia</td></tr> <tr> <td>Havíamos</td></tr> <tr> <td>Havíadeis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Havían</td></tr> </table>		Havia				Havíamos	Havíadeis	Havían
Havia									
Havíamos									
Havíadeis									
Havían									

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Haré</td><td rowspan="2">{</td><td rowspan="7">I shall, or will do, or make,</td><td rowspan="7">{</td></tr> <tr> <td>Harás</td></tr> </table>	Haré	{	I shall, or will do, or make,	{	Harás	{	{	
Haré	{	I shall, or will do, or make,				{			
Harás									
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Hará</td></tr> <tr> <td>Haremos</td></tr> <tr> <td>Haréis</td></tr> <tr> <td>Harán</td></tr> </table>		Hará				Haremos	Haréis	Harán
Hará									
Haremos									
Haréis									
Harán									

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>He, or tengo de hacér</td><td rowspan="2">{</td><td rowspan="7">I am to, or must do,</td><td rowspan="7">{</td></tr> <tr> <td>Has de hacér</td></tr> </table>	He, or tengo de hacér	{	I am to, or must do,	{	Has de hacér	{	{	
He, or tengo de hacér	{	I am to, or must do,				{			
Has de hacér									
<i>Plur.</i>	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Ha de hacér</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hémos de hacér</td></tr> <tr> <td>Havéys de hacér</td></tr> <tr> <td>Han de hacér</td></tr> </table>		Ha de hacér				Hémos de hacér	Havéys de hacér	Han de hacér
Ha de hacér									
Hémos de hacér									
Havéys de hacér									
Han de hacér									

Third Future.

Havré de hacér, I shall be oblig'd to do

Fourth Future.

Havía de hacer *I had, or I was to do*

Imperative Mood,

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Ház, er hágé tu</i>	<i>Do or make thou, or do thou</i>
	<i>Hágá el</i>	<i>Let him do or make</i>
	<i>Hagámos nosótrós</i>	<i>Let us do or make</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hacé vosótros</i>	<i>Do ye or make ye, let ye do</i>
	<i>Hágan óllos</i>	<i>Let them do or make</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá,
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense,

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hágá</i>	<i>When, or God grant I do or make, &c.</i>
	<i>Hágas</i>	
	<i>Hágá</i>	
	<i>Hagámos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hegáis</i>	
	<i>Hágan</i>	

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hiciéra, hiciéssé, haría</i>	<i>When, or would to God I did do or make, &c.</i>
	<i>Hiciétas, hiciésses, harías</i>	
	<i>Hiciéra, hiciéssé, haría</i>	
	<i>Hiciéramos, hiciéssimos, haríamos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hiciéradeis, hiciéssedeis, haríadeis</i>	
	<i>Hiciéran, hiciéssen, harían</i>	

Preter-

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya hécho Háyas hécho Háya hécho Hayámos hecho	When, or God grant I have made, or done, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayáis hécho Hayán hécho	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéisse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéisse	Hécho,	When, or would to God I had done or made, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéraran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Hiciére Hiciéres Hiciére	When, or God grant I shall or will do or make, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hiciéremos Hiciéredeis Hiciéren	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or hayré Huviéres Huviére	Hécho,	When, or God grant I shall have done or made, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Hacér,

To do or make.

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér hecho

*To have done or made***Future Tense.**

Havér, or esperár de hacér

*To make or do before/after***Gerund.**

Haciéndo

*Doing or making***Participle Active of the Preter Tense.**

Hécho

Made or done, &c.

In the same manner are declined all the Verbs proceeding by composition from *Hacér*, as *Deshacér*, to undo, *Rebacér*, to make again, *Contrabacér*, to counterfeit,

The Irregular Verb, Cabér, To be contained.**Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

Sing. { Yo quépo
 Tu cábes
 El cábe
Plur. { Cabémos
 Cabéis
 Cáben

I am contained
You are contained
He is contained
We are contained
Ye are contained
They are contained

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Cabía Cabías Cabía Cabíamos	I was contained You was contained He was contained We were contained
Plur.	Cabiadeis Cabían	Ye were contained They were contained

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Cúpe Cupíste Cúpo Cupimos	I have been contained You have been contained He has been contained We have been contained
Plur.	Cupísteis Cupiéron	Ye have been contained They have been contained

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve cabido Has cabido Ha cabido	I have been contained You have been contained He has been contained
Plur.	Hémos cabido Havéis cabido	We have been contained Ye have been contained
	Han cabido	They have been contained

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Havía Haviámos	Cabido,	I had been contained You had been contained He had been contained We had been contained
Plur.	Haviámos Haviadeis Havian		Ye had been contained They had been contained

First Future.

Plur.	Cabré Cabrás Cabrá	I shall or will be contained You shall or will be contained He shall or will be contained
Sing.	Cabrémos Cabréis Cabrán	We shall or will be contained Ye shall or will be contained They shall or will be contained
		Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or tengo de cabér Has de cabér Ha de cabér Hémos de cabér	}	<i>I am to, or must be contained, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havéis de cabér Han de cabér		

*The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.**Imperative Mood.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Cábe tu Quépa el	<i>Be you contained</i>
	{ Quepámos nosótrios	<i>Let him be contained</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Cabéd vosótrios	<i>Let us be contained</i>
	{ Quépan éllos	<i>Be ye contained</i>

Let them be contained

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.
 { When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quépa Quépas Quépa Quepámos	}	<i>When, or God grant I am contained, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quepáis Quépan		

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Cupiéra, cupiéssie, cabría Cupiéras, cupiésses, cabriás Cupiéra, cupiéssie, cabría	<i>When, or would to God I was contained, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Cupiéramos, cupiéssemos, cabriamos Cupiéradeis, cupiéssedeis, cabriadeis Cupíeran, cupiéssen, cabrian	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Háya cabido Hayas cabido Háya cabido	<i>When, or God grant I have been contained, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Háyamos cabido Háyais cabido Háyan cabido	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéssie Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssie	<i>When, or would to God I had been con- tained, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Cupiére Cupiéres Cupiére Cupiéremos	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will be contained, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Cupiéredeis Cupiéren	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	<i>When, or God grant I may or shall be contained here- after, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.**Present.****Cabér***To be contained.***Preterperfect.****Havér cabido***To have been contained.***Gerund.****Cabiéndo***Being contained.***Participle.****Cabido***Contained.****The Irregular Verb, Vér, To see.*****Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

Sing.	Yo véo	I see
	Tu ves	You see
	El ve	He sees
Plur.	Vémos	We see
	Véis	Ye see
	Ven	They see

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Vía, or veía	I did see
	Vías	You did see
	Vía	He did see
Plur.	Víamos	We did see
	Víadeis	Ye did see
	Vían	They did see

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Ví, or vide	I saw
	Viste	You saw
	Vío	He saw
	Vimos	We saw
Plur.	Vísteis	Ye saw
	Viéron	They saw

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or húve visto	I have seen
	Has visto	You have seen
	Ha visto	He has seen
	Hémos visto	We have seen
Plur.	Havéis visto	Ye have seen
	Han visto	They have seen

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía	Visto,	I had seen
	Havías		You had seen
	Havia		He had seen
	Haviamos		We had seen
Plur.	Haviadeis		Ye had seen
	Havían		They had seen

First Future.

Sing.	Veré	I shall or will see
	Verás	You shall or will see
	Verá	He shall or will see
	Verémos	We shall or will see
Plur.	Veréis	Ye shall or will see
	Verán	They shall or will see

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de vér	I am to or must see
	Has de vér	You are to or must see
	Ha de vér	He is to or must see
	Hémos de vér	We are to or must see
Plur.	Havéis de vér	Ye are to or must see
	Han de vér	They are to or must see

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Vée, or vé tu</i>	<i>Do thou see, or see thou</i>
	<i>Véa el</i>	<i>Let him see</i>
	<i>Veámos nosóotros</i>	<i>Let us see</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Ved vosóotros</i>	<i>Do ye see, or let ye see</i>
	<i>Véan éllos</i>	<i>Let them see</i>

The Subjunctive, the Optative, and the Infinitive Moods, altogether as in the other Verbs before, as the Present Tense of the two first Moods *Véa*, the Preterimperfect, *Viéra*, *vería*, *viéffe*; the Preterperfect, *Haya visto*, the Preterpluperfect, *Huvíera*, or *buviéffe visto*; the Future, *Viére*. The Infinitive, *Vér*, Participle, *Visto*.

The Irregular Verb Caér, To fall.**Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Cáigò</i>	<i>I fall</i>
	<i>Cáes</i>	<i>Thou falleſt</i>
	<i>Cáe</i>	<i>He falls</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Caémos</i>	<i>We fall</i>
	<i>Caéis</i>	<i>Ye fall</i>
	<i>Cáen</i>	<i>They fall</i>

Preterimperfect.*Caía, caías, &c.***First Preterperfect.***Cai, caíſte, &c.***Second**

Second Preterperfect.

He caído, Has caído, &c.

And so of the other Tenses, like the regular Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Cáe Cáiga Caigámos	Do you fall, or fall thou Let him fall Let us fall
Plur.	{ Caed Cáigan	Do ye fall, or let ye fall Let them fall

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Caér To fall

Gerund.

Cayéndo Falling

The Verb *Entendér*, to understand, in the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood makes *Entiéndo*; Preterperfect, *Entendí*.

Of the Verbs in Cér.

THE following Verbs ending in *cer*, are generally spelt without an *s*, though it were more proper to write them with it before the *c*, which would render them all regular, and more answerable to the *Latin*, from which many of them are derived; but since we generally find them otherwise, it is proper to note them down here.

Infinitive.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Present Tense.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Adolecer, to grow sick	Adolesco	Adoleci	
Agradecer, to thank	Agradesco	Agradeci	
Amortecer, to dye away	Amortesco	Amorteci	
Desfallecer, to faint	Desfallesco	Desfalleci	
Apetecer, to desire	Apetesco	Apeteci	
Crecer, to grow	Creco	Creci	
Encallecer, to wax hard as a corn	Encallesco	Encallecí	
Encarecer, to magnify	Encaresco	Encareci	
Establecer, to establish	Estableesco	Estableci	
Fenecer, to finish	Fenesco	Feneci	
Pacer, to feed	Pasco	Paci	
Perecer, to perish	Peresco	Pereci	
Compadecer, to have Compassion	Compadesco	Compadeci	
Conocer, to know	Conosco	Conoci	
Padecer, to suffer	Padesco	Padeci	
Ofrecer, to offer	Ofresco	Ofreci	
Guarnecer, to garnish	Guarnesco	Guarneci	
Parecer, to appear	Paresco	Pareci	
Nacer, to be born	Nasco	Naci	
Enflaquecer, to grow lean	Enflaqueesco	Enflaqueci	
Enriquecer, to enrich	Enriqueesco	Enriqueci	
Empobrecer, to grow poor	Empobresco	Empobreci	
Endurecer, to grow hard	Endurresco	Endureci	
Fallecer, to fail or dye	Fallesco	Falleci	
Engrandecer, to magnify	Engrandesco	Engrandeci	
Entristecer, to grow melancholy	Entristesco	Entristeci	
Ennoblecer, to ennable	Ennoblesco	Ennobledci	
Florecer, to flourish	Florresco	Floreci	
Fortalecer, to strengthen	Fortalesco	Fortaleci	
Favorecer, to favour	Favoresco	Favoreci	
Obedecer, to obey	Obedesco	Obedeci	
Desvanecer, to make vain	Desvanesco	Desvaneci	
Ensoberbecer, to grow proud	Ensoberbesco	Ensoberbeci	
Emmudecer, to grow dumb	Emmudesco	Emmudeci	
Establecer, to establish	Estableesco	Estableci	
Merecer, to merit.	Meresco	Mereci	

Except from this general Rule, *Vencér*, to overcome, *Vénzo*, *Vencí*; which shows what was said above, that they might more properly all be writ with an *s* in the infinitive Mood, and present Tense of the indicative Mood, as *Pascér*, from the Latin *Pascere*; *conoscér*, from the Latin *cognoscere*, and

and so of others; but custom has prevailed to write them as above, and there is no contending against it; but *Vencér*, cannot admit of the *s*, being derived from the Latin *vincere*, and therefore keeps on without an *s* in all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Verbs in gér.

THE following Verbs which have their Infinitive in *gér*, make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing *g* into *j*; the same in the third Singular, and the first and third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and through all persons, and both numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative, and the Subjunctive Moods: That is when in the *ultima*, or last syllable there is an *a* or *o*.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>
Encogér, to shrink,	Encójо,	Encogi.
Recogér, to gather,	Recojo,	Recogi.
Acogér, to entertain,	Acojo,	Acogi.
Escogér, to choose,	Escjojo,	Escogí.
Cogér, to catch,	Cojo,	Cogi.

In other Moods and Tenses, like the Regulars, except the Tenses before mentioned.

Of the Verbs in ér.

THE following Verbs in *ér* make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood by adding *i* in the last syllable but one of the Infinitive, and

M
the

the same in the second and third Persons Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and the Subjunctive Moods.

Infinitive.

Defendér, *to defend,*
Hendér, *to cleave asunder,*
Cernér, *to sift,*
Entendér, *to understand,*
Héder, *to stink,*

*Indicative,
Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Defiéndo, Defendí.
Hiéndo, Hendí.
Ciérno, Cerní.
Entiéndo, Entendí.
Hiédo, Hedi.

The next underneath form the Present Tense of the Indicative, by turning *o* in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into *ue*; and the same in the second and third Person Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

Infinitive,

Volvér, *to turn,*
Soler, *to be wont,*
Cozér, *to boil,*
Dolér, *to grieve,*
Olér, *to smell,*

*Indicative,
Present. Preterperfect.*

Vuélvo, Volví.
Suélo, Solí.
Cuézo, Cozí.
Duélo, Dolí.
Huélo, Oli.

The same in all Verbs deriv'd from any of them; as Revolvér, *to stir about;* Condolér, *to suffer with,* &c.

The next are vary'd as follows.

Infinitive.

Caér, *to fall.*
Roér, *to gnaw,*
Valér, *to be worth,*

*Indicative.
Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Cáigo, Cai.
Roigo, Roí.
Válgo, Valí.

Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugations.

THEY are formed and conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation; as *ver*, to see is made passive, thus:

Present. Indicative. Imperfect. Perfect.

Sing.	{ Sói visto éres visto es visto	{ I am seen, &c.	{ éra visto éras visto éra visto	{ I was seen, &c.	Fui, or he fido visto, &c.	I have been seen.
Plur.	{ Somos vistos Sóis vistos Son vistos		{ éramos vistos éradeis vistos éran vistos		And so the rest of the Tenses.	

Of Verbs Reciprocal.

These Verbs, and all terminated in *erse*, are likewise conjugated as those of the first Conjugation; as

Perderse,

To lose one's self, to be lost.

Indicative.

Present.

Imperfect.

Perfect.

Si.	{ Me pierdo Te pierdes Se pierde	{ I lose myself, &c.	{ Me perdía Te perdías Se perdía	{ I was losing myself, &c.	{ Me perdí Te perdiste Se perdió	I lost myself, &c.
Pl.	{ Nos perdemos Os perdéis Se pierden		{ Nos perdíamos Os perdiades Se perdían		{ Nos perdimos Os perdisteis Se perdieron	

and so of the other Tenses.

The Imperative thus:

Sing.	{ Pierdete Pierdese	{	Lose yourself.
Plur.	{ Perdámosnos Perded os Pierdanse		

Note. That the Persons are often doubled in the Conjugation of those Verbs; as, *Yo me pierdo, tu te pierdes, el se pierde, &c.* or thus, *Pierdome, Pierdeste, Perdiése, &c.* by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.

Of Verbs Impersonals.

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

Haver, *To be, as in what concerns a Place, &c.*

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Háy, or no hay *There is, or there is not.*

Imperfect.

Havia, *There was.*

First Preterperfect.

Huvo, *There was, or there has been.*

Second Perfect.

Ha havido, *There has been.*

Plusperfect.

Havia havido. *There had been.*

Future.

Havrás; *There will, or shall be.*

the SPANISH GRAMMAR. 165

Second Future.

Há de havér, *There must be.*

and so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

Haya, *Let there be.*

Optative. Present.

Oxalá que haya, *God grant that there be.*

Imperfect.

Que huviéra, &c. *That there might be.*

Perfect.

Que haya havido, *That there hath been.*

Plusperfect.

Que huviéra havido, *That there had been.*

Future.

Que huviére, *That there shall be, &c.*

The Spanish is perfect Latin in the Expressions of the impersonal Verbs, which manner cannot be found in the English, French, and other Languages; the English being obliged to add *there*, or *it*, and the French *il*, &c. and this in all the Impersonals throughout all the Conjugations.

Examples.

Mai un hombre que me espéra abáxo pará ir à la Comédia, *There is a Man that stays for me below to go to the Play-houſe.*

Havia cien soldados en la Emboscada, *There were one hundred
Soldiers in the Ambush.*

No havia mas que treinta y dos, *There were no more than thirty-two.*
Que haya o no haya poco importa, *that there be, or not, is but
of little Importance, &c.*

Ser, *To be, as in what concerns the Essence, or Qualities of a Thing, &c.*

Indicative.

Pres. Es, no es

It is, it is not.

Imperf. éra,

It was.

Perf. Fué,

It hath been.

and so in the other Tenses.

Examples.

Es noche, or es de noche,

It is Night.

Es verdad,

It is true.

Era así,

It was so.

Que sea o no sea, que se me da, *That it be, or not be, what is
it to me.*

In the same manner is conjugated the Verb *Ser*
Menejér, to be necessary, or requisite, as

Es Menestér, que yo váya à vér la Ciudad the Londres, pues
es un Mundo pequeño, enque florécen tódas las Artes y Ciencias
que están divididas por las quátro partes de el Mundo, *It is necessary that I go to see the City of London, because it is a little
World, in which all the Arts and Sciences that are divided in the
four Parts of the World do flourish.*

Será Menestér, que Pédro y Juán se avéngan, *It will be necessary or requisite, that Peter and John agree together.*

Si fuéra Menester, yo viniéra, *I would come if it should be requisite or necessary, &c.*

The Verb Impersonal Placér, To please.

Indicative Mood.

Pref. Pláce,

It pleases.

Imperf. Placía,

It did please.

First Perf. Plúgo,

It pleased.

Second Perf. Ha Placido,

It has pleased.

and so in the other Tenses.

Imperative.

Pléga,

Let it please, &c.

Llovér, To Rain.

Lluéve,

It rains.

Llovia,

It did rain, &c.

Hedér, To Stink.

Hiéde,

It stinks.

Hedia,

It did stink, &c.

Olér, To smell.

This Verbs changes *o* into *ue*, in the Present
Tenses, as

Huéle,

It smells.

Huéla,

Let it smell.

Que huéla,

That it may smell, &c.

Acontecer, acaecer, To happen.

Acontece,

It happens, &c.

Pertenecer, To belong.

Pertenéce,

It belongs, &c.

Enough of the Impersonal Actives, let us now put an Example of the Impersonal Passive.

Leérse, To be read.

Se Lee,	<i>It is reading.</i>
Se Leía,	<i>It was reading.</i>
Se Leyó,	<i>It has been read, &c.</i>

And so are conjugated *establecerse*, to be established or ordered by Parliament, &c.

Se establece,	<i>It is established.</i>
Se establecía,	<i>It was establishing.</i>
Se estableció	<i>It has been established, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Establecése,</i>	<i>Let it be established, &c.</i>

Sabérse, To be known.

Se sabe, or sábesé,	<i>It is known.</i>
Se sabia, or sabíase,	<i>It was known.</i>
Se supo, or supóse,	<i>It has been known, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Sépase,</i>	<i>Let it be known, &c.</i>

N. B. That all the Verbs regular or irregular of the Second Conjugation, may be conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation by the auxiliar Verb *estar*, and the Gerund of the Verb: as,

Present Tense. Indicative.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Léo, or estoi Leyéndo</i>	<i>I read, or I am reading, &c.</i>
	<i>Lees, or estás Leyéndo</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Lee, or está Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Leémos, or estámos Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Leéis, or estáis Leyéndo</i>	
	<i>Léen, or estan Leyéndo</i>	

and so in the rest of the Moods and Tenses.

*Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation
in ir, as*

Subir, To go up or ascend.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Súbo Súbes Súbe Subimos	} I go up or ascend, &c.
Plur.	{ Subís Suben	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Subía Subías Subía Subíamos	} I was going up, &c.
Plur.	{ Subíadeis, or subiais Subían	

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Subí Subíste Subió Subímos	} I went up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	{ Subísteis Subieron	

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Has Ha	} Subido,	{ I have gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	{ Hémos Havéis Han		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	Subido,	<i>I had gone up or ascended, &c.</i>
Plur.	Havíadeis Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	Subiré Subirás Subirá Subirémos	<i>I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.</i>
Plur.	Subiréis Subirán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de subir Has de subir Ha de subir	<i>I am to or must go up or ascend, &c.</i>
Plur.	Hémos de subir Havéis de subir Han de subir	

The Third and Fourth Future as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	Súbe tu Súba el	<i>Go you up or ascend</i>
	Subámos nosotros	<i>Let him go up or ascend</i>
Plur.	Subíd vosotros	<i>Let us go up or ascend</i>
	Súban ellos	<i>Do ye go up or ascend</i>

Let them go up or ascend

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ **Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,**
When, God grant, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Súba Súbas Súba Subámos	When or God grant I do go up or ascend, &c.
Plur.	{ Subáis Súban	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Subiéra, subiésse, or subiría Subiéras, subiésses, or subirías Subiéra, subiésse, or subiría	When, or would to God I did go up or ascend, &c.
Plur.	{ Subiéramos, subiéssemos, or subiríamos Subiéradeis, subiéssedeis, or subiríadeis	
	Subiéran, subiéssen, or subirian	

Préterperfect.

Sing.	{ Haya Hayas Haya Hayamos	Subido, { When, or God grant I have gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayais Hayan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéisse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéisse	Subido, { When, or would to God I had gone up or ascended, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Subiére Subiéres Subiére Subiéremos }</i>	<i>{ When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Subiéredeis Subiéren }</i>	

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos }</i>	<i>{ When, or God grants I shall have gone up or ascended, &c.</i>
Plur.	<i>{ Huviéredeis Huviéren }</i>	

Infinitive Mood.**Present Tense.**

Subir, *To go up or ascend.*

Preterperfect.

Havér subido, *To have gone up or ascended.*

Future Tense.

Hayér o esperár de subir, *To be to go up or ascend hereafter.*

Gerund.

Subiendo, *Going up or ascending.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sube, *Going up or ascending.*

Participle Passive.

Subido, *Gone up or ascended.*

In

In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of the third Conjugation in *ir*, are conjugated ; as *Sufrír*, to suffer, *Hinchír*, or *Hencbír*, to fill, &c.

These four Verbs, *Abrír*, to open, *Cubrir*, to cover, *Descubrir*, to uncover, and *Encubrir*, to conceal, are Regular, except only in the second Preterperfect Tense ; which, instead of *Abrido*, as other Verbs of this Sort, is *Abierto*, *Cubierto*, *Descubierto*, and *Encubierto*. Next follow

*The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation,
in ir, as*

Venir, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Véngo Viénes Viéne	I come You come He comes
Plur.	{ Venimos Venís Viénen	We come Ye come They come

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Venía Venías Venía	} I did come, &c.
	Veníamos	
Plur.	{ Veníadeis, or veníais	
	Venían	

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Víne	I came
		Veniste	You came
		Vino	He came
		Venímos	We came
Plur.	{	Venísteis	Ye came
		Veniéron	They came

Second and Third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or húve Has Ha Hémos	}	Venido,	{ I have come, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Havéis Han			

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia	}	Venido,	{
	Havias			
	Havia			
	Haviamos			
Plur.	Haviadeis			
	Havian			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Vendré, or verné</i>	<i>I shall, or will come, &c.</i>
	<i>Vendrás, or vernás</i>	
	<i>Vendrá, or verná</i>	
	<i>Vendrémos, or vernémos</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Vendréis, or verneis</i>	
	<i>Vendrán, or vernán</i>	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or tengo de venir Has de venir Ha de venir Hémos de venir	{ I am to, or must come, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	Havéis de venir Han de venir	

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{ Ven tu Vénga el	<i>Do you come, or come thou Let him come</i>
Plur.	{ Vengámos nosóotros Venid vosóotros Vengan éllos	<i>Let us come Do ye come, or let ye come Let them come</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.
When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ Vénga Véngas Vénga	<i>When, or God grant I do come, &c.</i>
	Véngamos	
Plur.	{ Vengáis Véngan	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{ Viniéra, viniéssse, vernía, or vendría Viniéras, viniéssses, vernías, or vendrías Viniéra, viniéssse, vernía, or vendría	<i>When, or would to God I did come, &c.</i>
	Viniéramos, viniésssemos, verníamos, or vendríamos	
Plur.	{ Viniéradeis, viniéssedeis, verníadeis, or vendríadeis Viniéran, viniéssen, vernían, or vendrían	

Preter-

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Háya</i>	<i>Venido,</i>	<i>When, or God grant I have come, &c.</i>
	<i>Háyas</i>		
	<i>Háya</i>		
	<i>Hayámos</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hayáis</i>		
	<i>Háyan</i>		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssle</i>	<i>Venido,</i>	<i>When, or would to God I had come, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéras, or huviéssles</i>		
	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssle</i>		
	<i>Huviéramos, or huviésssemos</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis</i>		
	<i>Huvierán, or huviéssen</i>		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Viniére</i>	<i>Venido,</i>	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will come, &c.</i>
	<i>Viniéres</i>		
	<i>Viniére</i>		
	<i>Viniéremos</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Viniéredeis</i>		
	<i>Viniéren</i>		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviére, or havré</i>	<i>Venido,</i>	<i>When, or God grant I shall or have come, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéres,</i>		
	<i>Huviére</i>		
	<i>Huviéremos</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéredeis</i>		
	<i>Huviéren</i>		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Venir,

To come.

Future.

Future.

Havér de venir,

To be to come:

Gerund.

Viniéndo,

Coming.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que viéne,

He that comes.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido,

Come.

The Compounds of this Verb *Venir*, are declined in every respect in all Moods and Tenses throughout as their original ; as *Revenir*, to return, *Revengo*, *Revíne*, &c. *Convenir*, to agree, *Convengo*, *Convíne*, &c. *Devenir*, to become, *Devengo*, *Devíne*, &c. *Sobrevenir*, to come upon suddenly, *Sobrevengo*, *Sobrevíne*, &c.

The Irregular Verb, Decír, To say.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Digo	I say
	Dices	You say
	Dice	He says
	Decimos	We say
Plur.	Decís	Ye say
	Dicen	They say

N

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Decía Decías Decía Decíamos	<i>I did say You did say He did say We did say</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Decíadeis, or decíais Decían	<i>Ye did say They did say</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Díxe Dixiste Díxo Diximos	<i>I said You said He said We said</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Dixisteis Dixéron	<i>Ye said They said</i>

Second and third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or húve dicho Has dicho Ha dicho	<i>I have said You have said He has said</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hemos dicho Haveís dicho	<i>We have said Ye have said</i>
	{ Han dicho	<i>They have said</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havia Havías Havia Haviámos	{ Dicho,	<i>I had said You had said He had said We had said</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haviadeis Havian		<i>Ye had said They had said</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Diré Dirás Dirá Dirémos	<i>I shall or will say You shall or will say He shall or will say We shall or will say</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Diréis Dirán	<i>Ye shall or will say They shall or will say</i>

Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or téngo de decir Has de decir Ha de decir	I am to or must say You are to or must say He is to or must say
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de decir Havéis de decir Han de decir	We are to or must say Ye are to or must say They are to or must say

the rest as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Di tu, or díce tu Diga el	Do thou say Let him say
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Digámos nosotros Décid vosotros	Let us say Do ye say
	{ Digan ellos	Let them say

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Díga Dígas Diga	When, or God grant I do say, &c.
	{ Digámos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Dígais	
	{ Dígan	
<i>Sing.</i>	Dixéra, dixéssse, diría	When, or would to God I did say, &c.
	{ Dixéras, dixéssses, dirías	

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Dixéra, dixéssse, diría Dixéras, dixéssses, dirías	When, or would to God I did say, &c.
	{ Dixéra, dixéssse, diría	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Dixéramos, dixésssemos, diríamos	
	{ Dixéradeis, dixéssdeis, diríadeis	
<i>Sing.</i>	Dixérán, dixéssen, dirían	When, or would to God I did say, &c.

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya dícho Háyas dícho Háya dícho Hayámos dícho	When, or God grant I have said, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayáis dícho Hayán dícho	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéssse Huviéras, or huviéssses	Dicho, { When, or would to God I had said, &c.
	Huviéra, or huviéssse	
	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéradeis, or huviéssledeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Dixére Dixéres	Dicho, { When, or God grant I shall or will say, &c.
	Dixére	
	Dixéremos	
<i>Plur.</i>	Dixéredeis	
	Dixéren	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres	Dicho, { When, or God grant I shall have said, &c.
	Huviére	
	Huviéremos	
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéredeis	
	Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dec'r,

To say.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Haver dicho, *To have said.*

Future Tense.

Avér de decir, *To be to say hereafter.*

Gerund.

Diciéndo, *Saying.*

Participle Active of the Present Tense.

El que dice, *One saying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho, *Said.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or esperá de decir, *He that is to say hereafter.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Decir*, in all Points, through all Moods and Tenses, are declined like the Simple, as,

Bendecir, *to bless,*
Maldecir, *to curse,*
Desdecir, *to unsay.*

Bendigo, *I bless,*
Maldigo, *I curse,*
Desdigo, *I unsay.*

Bendixe. *I have blessed,*
Maldixe. *I have cursed,*
Desdixe. *I have unsaid.*

The Irregular Verb, Ir, To go.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Voy	I go
	Vas	You go
	Va	He goes
	Vámos	We go
Plur.	Váis	Ye go
	Van	They go

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	Iba	I did go
	Ibas	You did go
	Iba	He did go
	Ibamos	We did go
Plur.	Ibais	Ye did go
	Iban	They did go

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Fui	I went
	Fuíste	You went
	Fué	He went
	Fuimos	We went
Plur.	Fuisteis	Ye went
	Fueron	They went

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or huve	}	{
	Has		
	Ha	}	{
	Hémos		
Plur.	Havéis		{
	Han		I have gone, &c.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	} 'Ido,	{ I had gone, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haviadeis Havían		
<i>Sing.</i>	{ Iré Irás Irá Irémos	} I shall or will go, &c.	
	{ Iréis Irán		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Iré Irás Irá Irémos	} I shall or will go, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Iréis Irán	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or tengo de ir Has de ir Ha de ir Hémos de ir	} I must or am to go, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haveís de ir Han de ir	

the Rest of the Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Ve tu Váya el	Do you go
		Let him go
<i>Plur.</i>	Vámos nosotros	Let us go
	{ Id vosotros Váyan ellos	Do ye go Let them go

Subjunctive and Optative Mood,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, Though, Would to God,

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Váya</i>	{	<i>When, or God grant I do go,</i> <i>&c.</i>
	<i>Váyas</i>		
	<i>Váya</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Váyamos</i>		

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Váyais</i>	{	
	<i>Váyan</i>		

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Fuéra, fuéssle, iría</i>	{	<i>When, or would</i> <i>to God I did go,</i> <i>&c.</i>
	<i>Fuéras, fuéssles, irías</i>		
	<i>Fuéra, fuéssle, iría</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Fuéramos, fuésslemos, iríamos</i>		

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Fuéradeis, fuéssledeis, iríadeis</i>	{	
	<i>Fuéran, fuésslen, irian</i>		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Háya</i>	{	<i>When, or God grant I have gone,</i> <i>&c.</i>
	<i>Háyas</i>		
	<i>Háya</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hayámos</i>		

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Hayáis</i>	{	
	<i>Háyan</i>		

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssé</i>	{	<i>When, or</i> <i>would to God</i> <i>I had gone,</i> <i>&c.</i>
	<i>Huviéras, or huviéssles</i>		
	<i>Huviéra, or huviéssé</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Huviéramos, or huviésslemos</i>		
	<i>Huviéradeis, or huviéssledeis</i>		

	<i>Huviéran, or huviésslen</i>
--	--------------------------------

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Fuére Fuéres Fuére Fuéremos Fuéredéis Fuéren	When, or God grant I shall or will go, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos Huviéredéis Huviéren	ido,	{ When, or God grants I shall or will have gone, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ir, To go.

Preterperfect.

Haver ido, To have gone.

Future Tense.

Havér de ir, To be to go hereafter.

Gerund.

Yéndo, Going.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que va, He that is going.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

ido, Gone.

The

The Irregular Verb, Oír, To hear.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{ 'Oigo 'Oyes Oye	I bear You bear He bears
Plur.	{ Oimos Oís 'Oyen	We bear Ye bear They bear

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{ Oía Oías Oía	I did bear You did bear He did bear
Plur.	{ Oíamos Oíais Oian	We did bear Ye did bear They did bear

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Of Oíste Oyó	I heard You heard He heard
Plur.	{ Oímos Oísteis Oyéron	We heard Ye heard They heard

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{ He, or húve Has	{ }	{ I have heard, &c.
	Ha		
	Hémos		
Plur.	Havéis		
	Han		

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos <i>Plur.</i>	{ Oído,	{ <i>I had beard, &c.</i>
	{ Havíamos Havíadesis Havían		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Oiré Oirás Oirá Oirámos <i>Plur.</i>	{	{
	{ Oirás Oirá Oirámos Oiréis Oirán		{ <i>I shall, or will bear, &c.</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or tengo de oír Has de oír Ha de oír <i>Plur.</i>	{	{
	{ Hemos de oír Havéis de oír Han de oír		{ <i>I must, or am to bear, &c.</i>

the Third and Fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ 'Oye tu 'Oiga aquél	<i>Do you bear</i>
	{ Oigámos nosótrios	<i>Let him bear</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oid vosótrios 'Oigan aquéllos	<i>Let us bear</i>
		<i>Do ye bear</i>
		<i>Let them bear</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Moods with the Signs.{ *Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá.*{ *When, Though, Would to God.**Present Tense.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{ 'Oiga 'Oigas 'Oiga Oigámos	}	<i>When, or God grant I do bear, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oigáis 'Oigan		

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Oyéra, oyéſſe, or oiría Oyéras, oyéſſes, or oirías	}	<i>When, or would to God I did bear, &c.</i>
	{ Oyéra, oyéſſe, or oiría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oyéramos, oyéſſemos, or oiriamos Oyéradeis, oyéſſedeis, or oriadeis Oyérán, oyéſſen, or oirían		

Preterperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Haya Háyas Háya	}	<i>Oido,</i> { <i>When, or God grant I have heard, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes	}	<i>Oido,</i> { <i>When, or would to God I had heard, &c.</i>
	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos		
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviérán, or huviéſſen		

First

First Future.

Sing.	<i>Oyére</i>	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will bear, &c.</i>
	<i>Oyéres</i>		
	<i>Oyére</i>		
	<i>Oyéremos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Oyéredeis</i>		
	<i>Oyéren</i>		

Second Future.

Sing.	<i>Huviére, or havré</i>	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have beard, &c.</i>
	<i>Huviéres,</i>		
	<i>Huviére</i>		
	<i>Huviéremos</i>		
Plur.	<i>Huviéredeis</i>		
	<i>Huviéren</i>		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Oir,

To bear.

Preterperfect.

Havér oido,

To have heard.

Future.

Havér de oír,

To be to hear hereafter.

Gerund.

Oyéndo,

Hearing.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Oyénte, or el que oye,

He that is hearing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Oido,

Heard.

The

The Irregular Verb, Herír, To hurt or wound.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Hiéro</i>	<i>I wound</i>
	<i>Hiéres</i>	<i>You wound</i>
	<i>Hiére</i>	<i>He wounds</i>
	<i>Herimos</i>	<i>We wound</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Heris</i>	<i>Ye wound</i>
	<i>Hiéren</i>	<i>They wound</i>

All the other Tenses of the Indicative Mood are as in Verbs Regular ; as

Preterimperfect.

Hería, Herías, &c. *I did wound, &c.*

First Preterperfect.

Herí, Heriste, &c. *I wounded, &c.*

Second Preterperfect.

He, has, &c. herido, *I have wounded, &c.*

Preterpluperfect.

Havía, havías, &c. herido, *I had wounded, &c.*

First Future.

Heriré, Herirás, &c. *I will or shall wound, &c.*

Second Future.

He or tengo, &c. de herir, *I, &c. am to or must wound, &c.*

Imperative

Imperatiye Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Hiére tu Hiéra el	<i>Do you strike or wound Let him strike or wound</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hirámos nosótrios Heríd vosótrios Hiérán éllos.	<i>Let us strike or wound Do ye strike or wound Let them strike or wound</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.
When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Hiéra Hiéras Hiéra	{ When, or God grant I do wound, &c.
	Hirámos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hiráis Hiérán	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Hiriéra, hiriésse, or heriría Hiriéras, hiriésses, or herirías	{ When, or would to God I did wound, &c.
	Hiriéra, hiriésse, or heriría	
	Hiriéramos, hiriéssemos, or heriríamos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hiriéradeis, hiriéssedeis, or heriríadeis Hiriéran, hiriéssen, or herirían	

Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Hiriére Hiriéres	{ When, or would to God I shall or will wound, &c.
	Hiriére	
	Hiriéremos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hiriéredeis Hiriéren	

The other Tenses as in Regular Verbs. The Infinitive Mood the same. The Gerund *Hiriéndo*, Wounding.

The

*The Irregular Verbs, Dormír, to sleep, and
Morír, to dye.*

Dormír, To sleep.

Indicative Mood,

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Duérmo Duérmes Duérme	I sleep You sleep He sleeps
Plur.	<i>{</i> Dormímos Dormís Duérmen	We sleep Ye sleep They sleep

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Dormía Dormías Dormía	I did sleep You did sleep He did sleep
Plur.	<i>{</i> Dormíamos Dormíadeis Dormían	We did sleep Ye did sleep They did sleep

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	<i>{</i> Dormí Dormiste	I slept You slept
	Durmío	He slept
Plur.	<i>{</i> Dormimos Dormisteis	We slept Ye slept
	Durmieron	They slept

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	<i>{</i> He, or húve dormido Has dormido	I have slept You have slept
	Ha dormido	He has slept
Plur.	<i>{</i> Hemos dormido Havéis dormido	We have slept Ye have slept
	Han dormido	They have slept

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Havía Havías Havía Havíamos	Dormido,	{ I had slept, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Haviadeis Havían		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Dormiré Dormirás Dormirá Dormirémos	{ I shall or will sleep, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Dormiréis Dormirán	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or téngó de dormir Has de dormir Ha de dormir	{ I am to or must sleep, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de dormir Havéis de dormir Han de dormir	

The other Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Duérme tu Duérma	Do you sleep
		Let him sleep
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Durmámos	Let us sleep
	{ Dormid	Do ye sleep
	{ Duérman	Let them sleep

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	Duérma Duérmas Duérma	<i>When, or God grant I do sleep, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Durmámos Durmáis Duérman	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Durmiéra, durmiéssle, or dormiría Durmiéras, durmiéssles, or dormirías	<i>When, or would to God I did sleep, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Durmiéramos, durmiéssimos, or dormiríamos	
	Durmiéradeis, durmiéssedeis, or dormiríadeis	
	Durmiéran, durmiéssen, or dormirían	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Háya dormido Háyas dormido	<i>When, or God grant I have slept, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Máya dormido	
	Hayámos dormido	
	Hayáis dormido	
	Háyan dormido	

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéssle Huviéras, or huviéssles	<i>When, or would to God I had slept, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Huviéra, or huviéssle Huviéras, or huviéssles	
	Huviéramos, or huviéssimos	
	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future:

Sing.	Durmiére Durmiéres Durmiére Durmiéremos Durmiéredeis Durmiéren	When, or God grant I shall or will sleep, &c.
Plur.		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren	Dormido, { When, or God grant I shall or will have slept, &c.
Plur.		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dormir, *To sleep.*

Preterperfect.

Havér dormido, *To have slept.*

Future Tense.

Havér de dormir, *To be to sleep.*

Gerund.

Durmiéndo, *Sleeping.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Dormiente, or el que Duérme, *He that is sleeping.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dormido, *Slept.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de dormir, *About to sleep hereafter.*

Morír,

To dye.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	Muéro	<i>I dye</i>
	Muértes	<i>You dye</i>
	Muére	<i>He dyes</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Morímos	<i>We dye</i>
	Morís	<i>Ye dye</i>
	Muéren	<i>They dye</i>

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	Moria	<i>I did dye</i>
	Morías	<i>You did dye</i>
	Moria	<i>He did dye</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Moriámos	<i>We did dye</i>
	Moriáis	<i>Ye did dye</i>
	Morían	<i>They did dye</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	Morí	<i>I dy'd</i>
	Moríste	<i>You dy'd</i>
	Murió	<i>He dy'd</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Morímos	<i>We dy'd</i>
	Morísteis	<i>Ye dy'd</i>
	Muriéron	<i>They dy'd</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	He, or húve muérto	<i>I have dy'd</i>
	Has muérto	<i>You have dy'd</i>
	Ha muérto	<i>He has dy'd</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Hémox muérto	<i>We have dy'd</i>
	Havéis muérto	<i>Ye have dy'd</i>
	Han muérto	<i>They have dy'd</i>

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Havía</i>		<i>Muerto,</i>	<i>I had dy'd, &c.</i>
	<i>Havías</i>			
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Havía</i>			
	<i>Havíamos</i>			
	<i>Havíadeis</i>			
	<i>Havían</i>			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Moriré</i>		<i>I shall, or will dye,</i>	<i>&c.</i>
	<i>Morirás</i>			
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Morirá</i>			
	<i>Morirémos</i>			
	<i>Moriréis</i>			
	<i>Morirán</i>			

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>He or tengo de morir</i>		<i>I am to, or must dye, &c.</i>	
	<i>Has de morir</i>			
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Ha de morir</i>			
	<i>Hémos de morir</i>			
	<i>Havéis de morir</i>			
	<i>Han de morir</i>			

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Muére</i>	<i>Do you dye</i>
	<i>Muéra</i>	<i>Let him dye</i>
	<i>Murámos</i>	<i>Let us dye</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Morid</i>	<i>Do ye dye</i>
	<i>Muérان</i>	<i>Let them dye</i>

O 3 Sub-

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunqué, Oxalá:
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	Muéra Muéras Muéra Murámos	When, or God grants I do dye, &c.
Plur.	Muráis Muéran	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría Muriéras, muriéssles, or mori- rías Muriéra, muriéssle, or mori- ría Muriéramos, muriésssemos, or moriríamos	When, or would to God I did dye, &c.
Plur.	Muriéradeis, muriéssedeis, or moriríadeis	
	Muriéran, muriéssen, or mori- rian	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	Háya muérto Háyas muérto Háya muérto Hayámos muérto	When, or God grant I have dy'd, &c.
Plur.	Hayáis muérto	
	Háyan muérto	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéssle Huviéras, or huviéssles Huviéra, or huviéssle Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	Muérto, When, or would to God I had dy'd, &c.
Plur.	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
	Huyiéran, or huviéssen	

First

First Future.

Sing.	Muriére Muriéres Muriére Muriéremos	When, or God grant I shall, or will dye, &c.
Plur.	Muriéredeis Muriéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére Huviéremos	When, or God grant I shall, or will have dy'd, &c.
Plur.	Huviéredeis Huviéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Morir, To dye.

Preterperfect.

Havér muerto, To have dy'd.

Future Tense.

Havér de morir, To be to dye.

Gerund.

Muriéndo, Dying.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que muére, He that is dying.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Muerto, Dyed.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de morir, About to dye hereafter.

The following Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation, change *e* of the Penultima or last Syllable but one of the infinitive Mood into *i*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and the third Person plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood; the second and third Persons singular, and the first and third plural of the Imperative Mood; and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods; thus,

Servir, to serve, *Sirvo*, I serve, *Sírvεs*, *Sírvε*,
Servímos, *Servís*, *Sírvεn*. Imparative, *Sírvε*, *Sírvá*,
Sírvámos, *Servid*, *Sírvan*. Optative and Sub-
 junctive, *Sírvα*, *Sírvαs*, &c. All other Tenses in
 each Mood as the regular Verbs. The others that
 are conjugated after this manner; are,

<i>Reír</i> , To laugh,	<i>Río</i> , I laugh,	<i>Ríes</i> , Ríe, &c.
<i>Concebír</i> , To conceive,	<i>Concíbo</i> , I conceive,	<i>Concíbes</i> , Concíbe, &c.
<i>Gemír</i> , To sigh,	<i>Gímo</i> , I sigh,	<i>Gímes</i> , Gíme, &c.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; as

<i>Advertír</i> , To take notice,	<i>Adviértο</i> , I take notice,	<i>Adviértεs</i> , &c.
<i>Arrepentír</i> , To repent,	<i>Arrepiéntο</i> , I repent,	<i>Arrepiéntεs</i> , &c.
<i>Consentír</i> , To consent,	<i>Confíέntο</i> , I consent,	<i>Confíέntεs</i> , &c.
<i>Mentír</i> , To lye,	<i>Miéntο</i> , I lye,	<i>Miéntεs</i> , &c.

The Verbs *Elegír*, To chuse, and *Regír*, To rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above; thus *Elegír*, *Elijo*; *Regír*, *Rijo*.

Fingír, To feign, and *Ungír*, To anoint, in the same manner make *Finjo*, and *Unjo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd.

Seguir, To follow, makes *Sigo*, *Síguεs*, *Sígue*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above.

These that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mentioned, are conjugated as here noted.

Conducír,

Conducír, To conduct, *Condúzgo*, *Condúces*, *Condúce*, *Condúcimos*, *Conducís*, *Condúcon*. Preterperfect, *Condúxe*, *Condúxiste*, &c. Optative and Subjunctive, Present, *Condúzga*. Preterimperfect, *Conduxéra*, or *Conduxésse*. Future, *Conduxére*. In the same manner, *Introducir*, *Inducir*, *Traducir*, and *Producir*.

Salír, To go out. Present, Indicative. *Sálgo*, *Sáles*, *Sále*, *Salímos*, *Salís*, *Sálen*. Imperative Mood, *Sal*, or *Sále*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salid*, *Sálgan*. Optative and Subjunctive Present, *Sálga*, *Sálgas*, &c. The rest Regular,

Of Verbs Passive, Ser oído, To be heard.

Indicative.

Present.

		Imperfect.
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Sói oído</i> <i>Eres oido</i> <i>Es oido</i>	<i>Era oido</i> <i>Eras oido</i> <i>Era oido</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Sómos oídos</i> <i>Sóis oídos</i> <i>Son oídos</i>	<i>Eramos oídos</i> <i>Erais oídos</i> <i>Eran oídos</i>

Perfect.

	<i>I have been heard, &c.</i>
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Fuí, or hé sido oido</i> <i>Fuiste, or has sido oido</i> <i>Fué, or ha sido oido</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Fuimos, or hémos sido oídos</i> <i>Fuisteis, or havéis sido oídos</i> <i>Fuérón, or han sido oídos, &c.</i>

The Reciprocal thus :

Rírse, To Laugh.

Present

Present Tense.

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Me río Te ríes Se rie Nos reímos }</i>	<i>I laugh.</i>	<i>{ Me reía Te reías Se reían Nos reíamos }</i>	<i>I was laughing.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Os reís Se rién }</i>		<i>{ Os reíadeis Se reían, &c. }</i>	

*Introducirse, To be introduced.**Present.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Me introduzgo Te introducés Se introduce Nos introducimos }</i>	<i>I am introduced.</i>	<i>{ Me introducía Te introducías Se introducía Nos introduciamos }</i>	<i>I was introduced.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Os introducís Se introducen }</i>		<i>{ Os introducialeis Se introducian }</i>	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Me introduxe, or heme introducido Te introduxiste, or hasfe introducido Se introduxo, or hasfe introducido Nos introduximos, or hemosnos introducido, or nos hemos introducido }</i>	<i>I have been introduced, or I introduced myself.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Os introduxisteis, or os havéis introducido Se introduxeron, or se han introducido }</i>	

Imperative.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>{ Introducete tu Introduzgase el }</i>	<i>Be introduced thou.</i>
	<i>{ Introduzgamones nosotros }</i>	<i>Let him be introduced.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	<i>{ Introducé os vosotros Introduzganse aquéllos }</i>	<i>Let us be introduced. Be ye introduced. Let them be introduced.</i>

And so in the rest of the Reciprocals, which are terminated in *se* in the Infinitive, except the Impersonal Passive.

Impersonal

Impersonal Actives.

Convenír, *To be convenient, fit, or proper.*

Indicative.

Pref. Conviene *It is convenient*

Imperf. Convenía *It was convenient*

First Perf. Convino { *It has been convenient*

Second Perf. Ha convenido }

Plusperf. Havia convenido *It had been convenient*

First Future, Convendrá *It will be convenient*

Second Future, Há de convenir *It must be convenient*

Imperative, Convénga *Let it be convenient, &c.*

Cumplir, *To behove.*

Present. Cumple *It behoves.*

Imperfect. Cumplía *It did behove.*

First Perfect. Cumplió *It behoveth.*

Second Perfect. Ha cumplido *It has behoved.*

Plusperfect. Havia cumplido *It had behoved.*

Future. Cumplirá, *It will behove.*

and so through the third Person of the other Moods. It is to be observed, that this Verb *Cumplir*, is given here as Impersonal, only in this Signification of *Behoving*, or *being meet*; for *Cumplir*, when

204 *The RUDIMENTS of*
when it signifies *to compleat*, or *fulfill*, is a regular
Verb, and has all its Persons accordingly.

Of the Impersonal Passives.

Decírse, To be said.

Indicative.

<i>Present.</i> Se dice, or diceſe	<i>It is said.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Se decía	<i>It was said.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Se díxo	<i>It was, or has been said.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Se há dicho	<i>It has been said.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Se havía dicho	<i>It had been said.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Se dirá	<i>It shall, or will be said, &c.</i>

After the same Manner are conjugated,

Escribirſe, To be written.

<i>Present.</i> Se escribe,	<i>It is written.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------

Referirſe, To be related or referred.

<i>Present.</i> Se Refiere,	<i>It is related, or referred, &c.</i>
-----------------------------	--

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise declined by the Verb *Eſtar* and the Gerund, as

'Oigo, or eſtói oyéndo,	<i>I bear, or I am bearing.</i>
Eſcribo, or eſtói escribiéndo,	<i>I write, or I am writing.</i>
Pido, or eſtói pidiéndo, &c.	<i>I beg, or I am begging.</i>

There

There are likewise some few Defective Verbs in the Spanish Tongue, which are perfect Latin, viz.

Sálve, hail, God save you, which is a saluting Verb, much used in their Prayers to the Virgin Mary, and in Poetry, and has no other Tense in Spanish than the Imperative.

'Ave, All hail, God save you, &c. is likewise used in Spanish, and found in several Books in a saluting manner, but never used otherwise than at Prayers, &c.

Vále, farewell, adieu, God be with you, is much used by the Spaniards, especially in writing, instead of *Your most Obedient Humble Servant*; and has but two Persons in the Imperative Mood, viz. *Vále*, and *Valéte*.

This may suffice as to Verbs, the Necessity of giving an Account of the Irregulars, and Impersonals having taken up much time.

C H A P. IV.

Of Participles.

ALTHO' there has been said enough of the Participles, as to what concerns the Grammar, in the third Chapter before the Conjugation of Verbs; yet I think it proper to observe,

That this Name *Participle*, comes from the *Latin Participium*, and is so called for its partaking of the Verb and Noun, as it has been said before.

Some are Simple, and others Compound, as

Andante,
Comandante,

Docto.
Indocto.

All the *Spaniſh* Verbs have not the Participles Present, and of the Future; and they are supplied by *elque*, and the third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, &c. as it is observed before.

Note. That the Participles of the Present Tense are often made Nouns in *Spaniſh*, as *Oyénte*, *Escri-biente*, *Antecedente*, &c.

C H A P. V.

Of Adverbs.

Having treated at large of the four declinable Parts of Speech, we now come to the four that are undeclinable; the first of which is the Adverb, (and so called because it is joined to Verbs, to declare the manner, or the Circumstances of the Action, or Passion; as *el Dánza*, or *Báila bien*, he dances well; *el pudeció cruelmente*, he suffer'd cruelly: it often explains likewise the Nouns, as *un hombre muy sábio*, a very learned Man; *Totalmente impudente*, intirely impudent, &c.

Of Adverbs there are several Sorts, some being Primitives, as *Si*, Yes; *No*, No, &c. Others are Derivatives, as particularly those which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as from *álta*, high, *altamente*, highly; from *graciosa*, pretty, *graciosamente*, prettily; or from those in *ente*, *z*, *al*, *il*, &c. as *prudentemente*, prudently; *Felizmente*, happily; *Moralmente*, morally; *Facilmente*, easily, &c.

There are Adverbs of Quality, of Quantity, of Time, &c. as may be seen here following,

Adverbs of Quality.

Fielmente, <i>faithfully</i>	Santamente, <i>holily</i>
Buenamente, or bien, <i>well</i>	Fieramente, <i>fiercely, &c.</i>
Malamente, or mal, <i>ill</i>	

And so the like may be form'd of all Adjectives.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Múcho, <i>much</i>	Pordemás, <i>to no purpose</i>
Poco, <i>little</i>	Demasiado, <i>too much</i>
Mas, <i>more</i>	

Adverbs of Time.

Hói, <i>to day</i>	Núnca, or jamás, <i>never</i>
Ahiér, <i>yesterday</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Mañána, <i>to morrow</i>	Siempre, <i>always</i>
Antehier, <i>the day before yesterday</i>	Entónces, <i>then</i>
Múcho ha, <i>long since</i>	Miéntras, <i>whilst</i>
Poco ha, <i>lately</i>	Súbito, or repentinamente, <i>suddenly</i>
Ahóra, <i>now</i>	Tárde, <i>late</i>
'Antes, <i>before</i>	Tempráno, <i>early</i>
Ahún, <i>yet, even</i>	à la tárde, <i>in the evening</i>
Amenudo, <i>often</i>	A deshora, <i>unseasonably,</i>
Luégo, <i>forthwith</i>	&c.

Adverbs of Place.

Aquí, <i>here</i>	Delante, <i>before</i>
Allí, <i>there</i>	Atrás, <i>behind</i>
Adónde, <i>where</i>	Aparte, <i>apart, or aside</i>
De dónde, <i>from whence</i>	Arriba, <i>above</i>
Acá, <i>hither</i>	Abajo, <i>below</i>
Acullá, <i>yonder</i>	Cerca, <i>near</i>
Ahí, <i>in that place</i>	Cabe, <i>close by</i>

De

208 *The RUDIMENTS of*

De aquí, from hence	Júnto, adjoining
De allí, from thence.	Léxos, far off
Déntro, within	Encíma, upon
Fuéra, without	Debáxo, underneath

Adverbs of Affirmation.

Si, yes	Verdaderamente, truly
Cíerto, truly	También, as well, also
Ciertamente, certainly	Antes, rather
En verdád, in truth	

Of Denying.

No, no, or not	Ni, neither
Náda, nothing	Tampóco, neither

Of Number.

Una vez, once	Múchas véces, often
Dos véces, twice	Pócas véces, seldom
Tres véces, three times	Amenudo, often

Of Shewing.

He aquí,	Bebold bere
----------	-------------

Of Encouraging.

Ea, ea pués	Go to then
-------------	------------

Of Increasing.

Mas,	More
------	------

Adverbs of Diminishing.

Ménos, less	Pássio, soft and fair
Póco, little	

Of

Of Wishing.

Oxalá, *would to God* O si, *O if it would be*

Of Asking:

Porqué, <i>wby</i>	De dónde, <i>from whence</i>
Que, <i>what</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Dónde, <i>where</i>	Cómo, <i>how</i>
Adónde, <i>whither</i>	

Of Doubting.

Quiza, *perhaps* Porventúra, *peradventure*

Of Order.

Primeramente, <i>firstly</i>	Aquénde, <i>on this side</i>
Después, <i>after</i>	Finalmente, <i>in fine</i>
Allende, <i>beyond</i>	'A lo último } <i>lastly, &c.</i>
Alfin, <i>at the end</i>	'A la Póstre } <i>lastly, &c.</i>
Alcabo, <i>at the end</i>	

Of Likeness.

Cómo, *as* Así, *so*
Casi, *almost* Tan, tanto, *so much, &c.*

Of Chance.

A caso, *accidentally.* Por dícha, *perchance*

Of Comparison.

Mas, <i>more</i>	Mejór, <i>better</i>
Ménos, <i>less</i>	Pecór, <i>worse</i>

Of gathering together.

Junto, or Juntamente 'A montones	Together In heaps
-------------------------------------	----------------------

Of Severing.

Aparte	Afunder
--------	---------

The Adverb *Hárto*, Enough, varies as to the Gender before Substantives ; for the Spaniards say, *Hárto Pan*, Bread enough, where it is Masculine ; and *Hárta Agua*, Water enough, where it is Feminine : But before Adjectives it always retains the Masculine Termination ; as *Hárto bueno*, and *Hárto buena*, though *bueno* and *buena* are Masculine and Feminine. There are some other Adverbs of the same Sort ; but it would be too tedious to mention all Things.

Note. That the Adjectives are often taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Termination ; as *Hágase esto primero*, let this be done first ; *póngase esto derécto*, put this right, or to rights.

C H A P. VI.

Of CONJUNCTIONS.

COnjunctions are a Part of Speech that joins Words and puts Sentences together. Some Conjunctions are Copulative, as uniting Words, and connecting the Sense ; others are Disjunctive, dividing the Sense, and only joining the Expressions ;

sions; others are conditional, shewing the Causes of Things; others Rational or Conclusive, which some call Collective or Illative; and others Adversatives, by which is demonstrated that which we say cannot hurt or obstruct. Besides these, the Latin hath others which they call Ordinatives, as also Expletives; but these last only serve for Ornament, for they no way add to, or take from the Discourse.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *e*, signifying *and*; viz. *y* before all Words, excepting those that begin with *i* Vowel, instead of which is put *e*, as we have said in the Observation on the Vowels; *Cómo*, as; *También*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *Ni*, neither; *O*, or *u*, or, either; *yá*, either, as *yá ésto*, *yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Causative, as *Porqué*, why, wherefore.

Conditional, *Si*, if; *dádo que*, granting that.

Exceptional, as *Sinó*, if not; *mas*, but; *otraménte*, otherwise.

There are others of other Sorts, as *Aloméños*, at least; *Aunque*, although; *tóda vía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

CHAP. VII.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS are a Part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in Apposition; as *ante la justicia*, before a Justice; or else in Composition; as *disponér*, to dispose, *injústo*, unjust.

Those us'd in Composition are *a*, *ad*, *al*, Arabic, *am*, *co*, *com*, *con*, *de*, *des*, *di*, *dis*, *en*, *ex*, *in*, *ob*, *pre*, *pro*, *re*, *se*, *so*, *su*, &c.

In a, as *Acanalár*, to cut in Gutters or Channels ; *abatanár*, to full or mill Cloth.

ad, as *Advenedízo*, a stranger ; *advertír*, to advertise.

al, *Alcázar*, a Royal Castle or Palace ; *Alquitára*, a Limbeck.

am, *Ampáro*, Protection ; *amparádo*, protected.

co, *coberedéro*, coheir ; *co-ordinár*, to co-ordain, or ordain together.

com, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometér*, to compromise.

con, *convenir*, to agree ; *condeccendér*, to descend.

de, *degenerár*, to degenerate ; *deponér*, to dispose.

des, *deshacér*, to undo ; *desfigurádo*, disfigured.

di, *diferír*, to defer ; *diffundír*, to diffuse, to spread abroad.

dis, *disculpár*, to excuse ; *disponér*, to dispose.

en, *entorpecér*, to grow dull or stupid ; *envergonzárá*, to make ashamed.

ex, *exponér*, to expound, interpret ; *expandér*, to spread.

in, *Indignación*, Indignation ; *inferír*, to infer.

ob, *obtenér*, to obtain ; *obtenido*, obtained.

pre, *preponér*, to set before ; *prevenír*, to prevent.

pro, *proponér*, to propose ; *proseguír*, to prosecute.

re, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *reponér*, to put again.

se, *separár*, to separate ; *separádo*, separated.

so, *socorrér*, to succour ; *solicitár*, to solicit.

Su, *suponér*, to suppose ; *suportár*, to support, &c.

These Prepositions following serve to the Genitive Case.

Antes, as *Antes del dia*, before Day-break.

Delante, before, as *Delante del Júez*, before the Judge.

De, of ; as *la Muger de Pédro*, Peter's Wife, that is, the Wife of Peter.

Dentro, within ; as *Dentro de mi cása*, within my House.

Detrás, behind ; as *detrás del Cócke*, behind the Coach.

Despues, after ; as *despues de esto*, after this.
Báxo, } under ; as *llevába un Coléto báxo de su cápa*,
Debáxo } he had on a Buff-Coat, under his
Cloak. *Debáxo de mi Manto*, al
Réy máto, under my Cloak I'll kill
the King.

Abáxo, down, below, is an Adverb.

Encima, upon ; as *encima del Agua*, upon the Water.

Derredór, round about, as *al derredór de Castillo*,
round about the Castle.

Cérca, near ; as *Pedro está cérrca de Juan*, Peter is
near to John.

Acérca, Though formerly used as a Proposition instead of *Cérca*, it is now used only as an Adverb, and signifies *concerning*, *near*, and governs a Genitive ; as *acérca de esto que dice*? what say you concerning this? *los días acérca del Nacimiento de Christo son mui frios*, the Days about or near Christmas are very cold.

Fuéra, out ; as *Váya fuéra de mi Cása*, go out of my House.

Fuéra, *afuéra*, without, are Adverbs.

Entórno } about ; as *entorno de mi*, about me, round

Contórno } about me.

Enfrénte, over-against ; as *Enfrente de san Pablo*,
over-against St Pauls, &c.

The following serve for the Dative Case.

á } to, *as*, *à Dios sólo se ba de dar la Adoración*,
pára } for } to God alone we must pay Worship : *dí*

esto à Pédro, I gave this to Peter ; *ésto es pára mi*, this is for me.

And though there are some Authors, who place here the Prepositions *bácia*, towards, and *basta*, even to ; I am of Opinion that they belong to the Accusative, because they are equivalent to the Latin *erga*, *versus*, *versum* ; *usque*, *ad*, &c. and I see no Reason to the contrary.

Prepositions governing the Accusative.

à, as *ámo à Dios*, I love God ; *voy à Róma*, I go to Rome. *Míre à tal parte*, look on such side, toward such a place, and stands *por bácia*, towards ; *à modo de Conversación*, by way of Conversation, instead of *por*, by.

Ante, before ; as *bói el doce de Júnio pareció ante mi*, this Day the twelfeth of June appeared or came before me.

Entre, among, between ; as *bablándo entre nosotros*, *le diré la diferencia*, que *bái entre las Córtes de Londres y Madrid*, speaking between us, (among us) I will tell you the Difference that there is between the Courts of London and Madrid.

Según, according ; as *según loque se me dixo, créo, que todo es un embuste*, according to what is told me, I believe, that every thing is a fly Lie, Deceit, Falsehood, or Imposition.

Sobre, upon, as *todo lo que tengo, lo puedo llevar sobre este Caballo*, every thing I have, I can carry it upon this Horse.

Hasta, until, even to ; as *Passearé hasta las ocho de la Nocbe*, I will walk until nine a Clock in the Night ; *basta Mañana*, till to morrow, *iré hasta Roma*, I will go as far as Rome, even to Rome.

Hacia, towards ; *voyme bácia el Río*, I go towards the River.

Por,

Por, for, by, through ; *Consúleme por amor de Díos*, Comfort me for God's sake ; *Las diez tocaron quando passaba por esta calle*, it struck ten a Clock when I went through this Street. *Le aseguro ésto por mi palabra, por mi vida, por mi Fe*, I assure you this by my Word, by my Life, by my Faith. *Por* is sometimes taken for *para*, but of this we will take notice afterwards.

Cábe, near, as *Le ballé cábe la Ciudad* (*Cábe*, an old Word) I found him near the City.

En, in ; as *espero y creo en Díos*, I hope, and believe in God.

Cóntra, against, as *lo que bolas es tóntra los Atributos de Díos*, what you do speak is against the Attributes of God, &c.

Prepositions governing the Ablative.

à, as *creo que le Castigarán à pena de Privacion de Oficio*, I believe that they will punish him, with the Privation, or depriving him of his Office or Employment. *Lo hizo à color de engañarnos*, he has done it with an Intention to deceive under the Colour, &c. *à* is taken here as *con*.

Con, with ; *ven con mígo*, come with me.

De, as *Díos formó à Eva de la Costilla, que es hueso tuerto*, God formed Eve from the Rib, which is a crooked Bone. *Vine de Róma*, I came from Rome.

Sin, without. *Lo hice sin ayuda*, I have done it without help.

En, in ; *no tengo dinero en el Bolso*, I have no Money in the Purse.

Por, for, *Lo hice por ti*, I have done it for you, &c.

C H A P. VIII.

Of INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections are Parcicles thrown into Discourse, which denote, or show the Passions of the Mind, Of Mirth, or Rejoycing. *A la gála, a la gála.* Which is O fine, O rare, &c.

Wondering, *Valgame Diós,* God help me, which is also usual in a Fright, and upon other Occasions.

Grieving, *Guay, Alas!* or *Ay de mi!* Alas for me.

Wishing, *Oxalá,* Would to God, &c.

Ha, ah! bé, as bé que dices, he! what you say!

'O, as O Dios! O Dolor! O God! O pain, or grief!

A, as à *Fuláno,* ho, there such a one, &c.

R E M A R K S upon some Spanish Words and Phrases.

ALL Languages have some peculiar Expressions to themselves, which are not the same in other Tongues, and the *Spanish* is not without some of that Sort. Having therefore already run through all, that belongs to the usual Parts of Discourse, and their Nature; it will not be improper to add something concerning these Words and Phrases in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are not to be found in others.

In the first place, the Preposition *Des* is inseparable from some other Word, and never to be used but

but in Composition, as signifying nothing by itself; but being join'd to another Word, denotes a Privation of what the other imports, as the Syllable *Dis* does in some *English* Words; thus *Hónra*, is Honour, *Deshónra*, Dishonour, or Disgrace: *Dí-cha*, good Fortune, *Desdícba*, Misfortune. The same Effect it has when join'd with Verbs; as *Hacér*, to make, *Deshacér*, to undo; *Armár*, to arm, *Desarmár*, to disarm.

En is commonly in, as *en casa*, in the House; *en la calle*, in the Street, &c. but in some Cases it has a peculiar Signification, not to be express'd in any other Language, that I know of; as for instance, *Estar en cuérpo*, literally in *English* is, to be in Body, which is nonsense; but the true Meaning of it, is, to be without a Coat or Cloak for a Man, or for a Woman without a Scarf or a Veil, so that the Body is more expos'd to View, without an upper Garment. *Eftá en piérnas*, literally he is in Legs, which has no Meaning, but it signifies, he is bare legg'd, that is, his Legs are expos'd without Stockings. *Eftóis en cárnes*, literally I am in Flesh, but the true Meaning is, I am stark naked, I have nothing to cover my Flesh. *En cuéros*, signifies the same as *En cárnes*, that is stark naked, the Difference being that *en cárnes*, is in naked Flesh, and *en cuéros*, is in naked Skin; much like the *English* Expression, that a Man is in Buff, when he is stark naked.

En shews, or it notes the last end of a Thing; as *creo en Dios*, I believe in God. When it's found before the Infinitive, then it turns the Infinitive into an *English* Gerund, as *consiste en bablár bien*, it consists or depends in speaking well. When before a Gerund, it is the same as *after* and *at* in *English*; as *en cenando*, after Supper, or when at Supper; *en confessando la Verdád*, after your confessing the Truth, or when you confess the Truth; it signifies *as soon*, as *en acabando lo diré*, as soon as I have done I will tell

it to you. *En despertando, me levantaré*, as soon as I wake, I will get up ; and then it stands for *luégo*, or *tan presto que*, *cómo*, or *quando* ; as *en despertando*, viz. *Quando despertare*, when I shall, or should wake.

Hidepúta in its Genuine and usual Acceptation, is the Contraction of *Hijo de púta*, Son of a Whore, a most scandalous Word in all Languages, and as such, scarce ever us'd by Spaniards of any Polite-ness, in its vulgar and true Meaning : Yet as bad as it is in itself, it is become a Sort of Exclamation, mostly us'd by vulgar People, and that in Contempt, and by way of Scorn, as *O bidepúta y que gran personage que es !* O the Son of a Whore, or the Scoundrel, what a great Person he is ! to denote a mean Person, a vile Wretch, carrying himself loftily. Yet some, through Ignorance, not reflecting on the Baseness of the Expression, will let it fly without thinking even to commend any thing that surprises them, as *O bidepúta y que bien que lo ba bécbo !* where that scandalous word drops without thinking, and the whole imports no more, than, O how bravely he has done it ! even as among us, we too often hear a Rake say to his Friend, Damn you Tom, I'm glad to see you ! thus cursing him out of meer Affection.

Hidágo, is a Gentleman, a Man of good Birth, being a Contraction of *Hijo dalgo*, or rather *Hijo de algo*, the Son of something, that is, of a Person of note, or one remarkable for something ; not for much Money, which in *Spain*, does not make a Gentleman, but for something that is honourable ; as Virtue, Learning, Wisdom, or Valour.

Vuéstra mercé, (as it is said before) is generally contracted into *Usted* in speaking, and in writing express'd by these two Letters *V. M.* This is a courteous expression to be found in no other Language, being always us'd where there is any Civility, the Spaniards never saying you to one another, which would

would be very unmanly; for *Tu*, you, is only us'd from a Master to a Servant, or from a Superior to some very mean Person. Where the least respect is shown, and this practised even to very indifferent Persons; they say *Vos*, ye; and even this is not allow'd of, unless the Person so expressing himself, be much superior to the other. The common word therefore in Discourse between People of any Fashion, or good Manners is *usted*, for *Vuestra mercé*, which has nothing to answer it in English, but is in the Nature of your Worship; for in speaking to a Nobleman, they use *Vuestra Señoría*, sometimes contracted into *Usia*, your Lordship: *Vuestra Excellenciá*, your Excellency, &c. but they have not the Title of your Grace, as in English. There is another respectful Way of speaking, which is calling a Man by his Name, though speaking to him, *Sea servido de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please *Don John* to sit down, &c. Where we may also observe, that the word *Don* is also peculiar to the Spanish, formerly a Title more sparingly us'd, and given only to Knights, and Persons of Distinction; but now grown common to all that can claim any thing of Gentility, but yet not to Tradesmen, and inferior Persons. *Señor*, is like the Latin *Dominus*, either Sir, or Lord, and therefore equivocal; for they say, *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the King; and *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the least Gentleman; just as we do, Sir, to the King, and to any other. Yet is *Señor*, a Lord, as has been said; the which Difference is found by the manner of speaking; for though in speaking they say, *Señor Don Juan*, *Señor Don Pedro*, yet a Letter must not be superscrib'd, *Al Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord; because then it implies Dignity, and in common speaking it does not. So in speaking to say, *es un Señor*, or *es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However within a Letter, as we begin Sir, so they begin, *Mui Señor mio*, without thereby meaning to give the title of Lord, but as if

if we should say, my good Master, or good Sir. Much more may be said to this purpose, but this Place will not allow of it; these few Instructions are convenient for Learners, that they may not only speak true *Spanisb*, but with good manners, and politely.

Fuláno, zutáno or citáno, with their Diminutives *Fulaníco, or Fulanillo, zutaníco or citaníco, and citanillo*, are Words us'd to signify a third Person nameless, as we say, such a one, and all of them import the same: the two first being us'd to express two distinct Persons, not named, as such a one, and such a one; the first of them always us'd if only one Person be spoke of, and the second never but when there is occasion to mention two. They are often us'd in the Feminine Gender, as *Fulána, citána*.

Abáxo, in it's own Sense signifies below, and Debáxo, under; but as apply'd, the first may have the same meaning with the latter; as De Diós abáxo yó lo bize bómber, under God I made him a Man. Del Rey abáxo no ay mayór Personaje, next the King there is no greater Person.

A vueltas, though it seems to come from vuélvo, I turn, or return, signifies among; as A vueltas de otras cósas le dió una cadéna: among other things he gave him a chain.

Cábo, properly signifies the end; but it extends to other meanings, as Estó al cábo, in one sense is, I am reduc'd to extremity, either with Sickness, or Poverty; and the same Words import, I fully understand, or I am entirely apprized of the thing. Again, Mugér bermósa por el cábo, is a Woman perfectly beautiful; and Tomár la cósa muí por el cábo, is to take a thing in the hardest sense.

Recáudo, or Recádo, for it is written both ways, though most commonly pronounced the latter, is a word of various Significations. El dinéro está à buen recádo, The Money is safely plac'd, it is in good

good Hands, or safe. *Recádo pára escribir*, the necessaries for writing. *Dile un recádo*, I deliver'd him a Message. *Buén recádo trábigo*, I come well provided. *Recádo*, is also us'd for a Sub pena, and several other ways.

Aldabáda, is properly, a Knock at a Door; but *dar aldabádas*, is sometimes meant of much babling, or talking to no purpose.

A pies juntillas, is a very odd Expression, without any real Signification of it self, and yet there is a way of using it thus, *Créo a pies juntillas*, I positively believe, I am stedfast in the Belief, without asking any further Questions.

Tomár las de villa Diego, is to run away.

Hablár de chacota, to banter, or talk idly, a word seldom us'd, but by way of Contempt of the Person it is applied to.

Dar xabón a la Rópa, to soap Linnen for washing; but *Dar un xabón a una persona*, is what we call to rattle one, to give a severe Reprimand.

A Few Comparisons.

Mas blanco que la Nieve, whiter than Snow.

Mas negro que la Pez, blacker than Pitch.

Mas amargo que la Hiél, more bitter than Gaul.

Mas dulce que la Miél, sweeter than Honey.

Mas brávo que un León, fiercer than a Lyon.

Mas mánso que una ovéja, tamer than a Sheep.

Comparisons to express doing Things impracticable.

Es como dar con el púño en el Ciélo. That is like striking at Heaven.

Es como becbár lánzas en la Mar. That is like darting at the Sea.

Es como predicár en Desíerto. It is like preaching in a Desert.

*

Es

Es cómo coger agua en Cesto. It is like drawing Water in a Basket.

Es cómo querer volar sin alas. It is like attempting to fly without Wings.

Es como el perro del Hortelano, que ni come las berzas, ni las deixa comér a los otros. He is like the Gardiner's Dog, that neither eat's Cabbage, nor lets others eat it. We say, like a Dog in a Manger, that will neither eat Hay, nor let the Horse eat it.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs Adjectives are turned likewise in Spanish by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive, as *prudentemente*, prudently, is the very same as *con prudencia*, with prudence.

Atrevidamente, boldly, *con atrevimiento*, with boldness.

Elegantemente, elegantly.

Con elegancia, with elegance.

Dichosamente, happily.

Con dicha, with happiness.

Liberamente, liberally, *con liberalidad*, with liberality, &c.

There are Degrees of Comparison among the Adverbs, as *Doctamente*, *mas doctamente*, *doctíssimamente*, wisely.

áy, *bái*, *abi*.

There are several who make no Difference between *ay* the Interjection, *áy* the Verb, and *áy* the Adverb; but there is a vast one, in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *áy*, alass, is rightly spelt, and the Accent is to be on the *á*, and 'tis to be pronounced long; the Verb is written thus *bái*, there is but one Syllable, and to be pronounced as such: the Adverb thus *abi* there; and a strong Accent is to be put on the *i*, as *áy de mi!* *que bái muchos Atóeos* or *Atóeas abi en Londres*, *y temo el ir*, alass for me! that there are many Atheists there

there (or in that place *London*) in *London*, and I am afraid to go.

aquí, acá, &c.

Aquí here, in the Place where one stands ; *acá*, hither ; *paraquí, por acá*, here-abouts ; *abi*, there, a little farther ; *allá*, thither, to that place ; *acullá*, yonder, there, in that place ; *porabí porallá*, there-abouts ; *por abi porallá*, on that side, that way ; and they are join'd to the Prepositions *de*, from, *por*, by ; as *de aquí, de acá*, from, hence ; *de allá, de aculla*, from, thence ; *por aquí*, by here, by this place ; *por acá*, by these Parts, in these Parts ; *por allá*, by those Parts ; *por aculla*, by those other remote Parts or Places.

ante, ántes.

Ante, before, is a Preposition, as *no conviene bablár así ante la preséncia del Rey*, it is not fit or convenient to speak so, or thus, before the King's Presence : *ante* is an Adverb, and is used as *ántes*, as in the Law of *la Partida 2*, Tit. 4. L. 1. but at present never used so : It signifies sometimes that which is first in time, or of a greater importance, as *ante todas las cósas*, before all things : *ante* signifies likewise a Buffoloe's Hide, and the Fruit Plates that are serv'd up at Dinner or Supper before the Meat : *ántes* has likewise this last Signification.

Antes, as an Adverb, signifies the preceeding Time or Place ; as *lo dixe ántes*, I said it before ; *conservó los Criados en los cargos de ántes*, he kept the Servants in the same Places they had before ; it is likewise a Preposition Adversative, and signifies rather, as *antes quíero morir que pecár*, I rather love to die, then to sin : It requires likewise a Genitive, as *ántes de la Muerte del Rey apareció un Cometa*, a Comet

224 *The RUDIMENT S of*
a Comet did appear before the Death of the King,
or the King's Death.

Antes is taken as *antecedente*, preceeding, or
before, as *el exército del año ántes nos taló los Campus*,
the Army of the preceeding Year spoiled, ravaged,
or wasted the Fields.

Antes con antes, adverbial. *immediately*, and more
than immediately, if possible; a sudden diligence,
ex improviso, suddenly, unexpected; as it will be
seen in the several Phrases that often happen in
Writings.

Antes del dia, before Day break; *antesque*, a
Preposition conjunctive, as *antesque váyas a tra-
jar, vete*; à Rezár, before you go to Work, go to
or do your Prayers.

Ante and *antes* are likewise Preposisons, and help
in the Composition of some Words, but never
change *e* or *es* into *i* as an Author observes wrong-
fully, because we don't say, *Anticámara*, but *Ante-
cámara*, Anti-chamber, *Antesála*, a Room before
the Saloon, or the State Room.

Delante, adelante.

Delante, before, in presence, fronting, is a Pre-
position governing the Genitive, as *vivo delante de la
Lonja*, I live fronting the Change: este Crimen se comitió
delante del Gobernadór, this Crime was committed
before the Governor: *Quítate de delante de mi*, go
away, or from thy presence. It is likewise an Adverb,
as *el General va delante*, the General goes at the
Head, or before, &c.

Adelante, an Adverb, signifies fronting, forwards,
before, as *vámos adelante*, let us go on, or forwards. It
signifies Time, when it has before it *en*, *pára*, *dé aqui*,
de allí, &c. as *en adelante*, afterwards, in time to
come; *pára en adelante*, for the time to come; *de
aqui adelante*, from hence forward; *mas adelante*,
farther

farther yet; *de hoy en adelante*, from this time forward, &c.

Aina, áinas.

Aina, Adverb, soon, sooner, as *más áina lo haré yo que tu*, I will do it sooner than you; *tu aprendiste la lección en una hora, pero yo la aprenderé más áina*, you did learn your Lesson in an Hour, but I will learn it sooner. So that *áina* always has *mas* before it.

Ainas, Adverb, almost, near atend; as *áinas me mató*, he almost kill'd me; *estoy áinas de la Muerte*, I am near my Death. These words are but seldom used in Spanish.

Balde, de Balde, en balde.

Balde is a Word used generally in *Andalusia*, and signifies a Bucket to draw Water from a Well, &c. but in *Spanish* has no Signification, but when in Composition, and then is an Adverb; as *debálde, gratis*, free cost, for nothing, without occasion; as *le he servido debálde*, I have served him for nothing; *comimos de balde*, we eat free cost; *le castigó de balde*, punished him without occasion. *Enbalde* (not *embalde*, as some do write it carelessly) in vain, without effect; as, *después de todo, nuestro trabajo será enbalde*, after all, our Labour will be in vain; *Prediqué enbalde*, I preached without effect, in vain.

Note, This frequent Expression of some Shopkeepers to the Buyers; *se lo venderé de balde*, I will sell it to you for nothing, that is, almost for nothing, so cheap that the like will be found nowhere for Cheapness.

Q

Atruéque

Atruéque.

Is an Adverb, *vamos atruéque*, let us change; but when it signifies instead, or in the room of, then it is a Preposition, and requires the Genitive; as, *atruéque de su anillo*, or *sorija*, *le daré la miá*, I will give you my Ring instead, or in the room of yours.

Of Pára and Por.

These Prepositions are often confounded by the Gentlemen that learn the *Spaniſh*, nay even by ſome *Spaniſh* Authors, ſo that I think it neceſſary to obſerve that,

Pára, for; ſerves to denote the Utility, or Detriment to a Person; as *eftos cién reales ſon pára Pedro*, que es pobre, these hundred Reals are for Peter, who is poor, or because he is poor. *Los dí pára vmd.* I gave them for you; *víne aquí pára bablár con vmd.* I came here to speak with you.

When the *English* puts *to* before the Infinitive, the *Spaniards* make uſe of *de*, *a*, *para*, or *por*; but with this Diſtinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive, and when the Verbs *venir*, *bavér*, *tenér*, &c. or a Noun is before the Infinitive; as *Vengo de cenar*, I come from Supper; *be de de amár*, I muſt love; *tengo de ir*, I muſt go; *tengo neceſſidád de fer consoládo*, I want to be comforted, &c. when a Verb of Motion preceeds the Infinitive, as *la Léy de Díos me compéle à bacér bién*, Divine Law compels me to do good; *vóî à leer eſte libro*, I go to read this Book. *Pára*, when the Verb tends to an Habit, Use, Custom, or its Quality, as *o ſeñor! dadme vueſtra Grácia, y bacédme bábil para amaros*, *conſtante pára ſufrir*, *y firme pára perſe-*

verár, O Lord! give me thy Grace, and make me able to love you, constant to suffer, and firm or stable to continue or persevere. *Por,* and *pára,* when they denote the End that moves or inclines, the Cause and the Means to obtain it; as *sirvo à Dios por gozár de el prémio,* I serve God to enjoy the Reward, or that I may, or in order to enjoy the Reward. *El espíritu malo nos pone amenudo malos pensamientos para desviarnos del camino de la virtud,* the evil Spirit puts on us often bad Thoughts to set us out of the way of Virtue.

Para is used in questioning and answering, and signifies, for what? why? for whom? to what purpose, &c. as *Paraqué se díxo esto?* to what purpose? to what end, for what is this said? *No bái paraqué,* there is no Reason, no Occasion, no Cause: *Para quien es ésta carta?* *para mi,* for whom is this Letter? for me. *Paraqué* signifies likewise *that,* and is a Sign that denotes the subjunctive Mood; as, *paraqué yo áme,* that I may love: It expresses also, to what End, Office, or Place, a Thing, or a Person is good for; as *éste Caballero es bueno para Ministro,* *aquél para Secretário, y el otro para Mayor domo,* this Gentleman is good for a Minister, viz. to be a Minister, that for a Secretary, and the other for a Steward. *Este epéjo es bueno para este quárto, y aquéllas cortinas para mi cámara,* this Looking-Glass is good for this Room, and those Curtains for my Bed.

It denotes present and future Time; as, *este vestido es bueno para bói, pára Mañana, y para cada día,* this Suit of Cloth is good for this Day, for To-morrow, and for every Day: *he comprádo trigo para un año,* I have bought Corn for a Year: *Abóra y para siempre, alabémos a Dios,* let us praise God now and for ever. Exceptions, *Para el año passado se compráron estas provisiónes, y dúran haun,* these Pro-

visions were bought for last Year, that is, for the service of last Year, and last as yet : *Para ayér (el día de ayér) se biciéron estos Versos*, these Verses were made for Yesterday, that is, to celebrate that Day.

Pára poco, good for little, of small capacity.

Paracon, between us, or in my, or our Opinion ; as, *para conmigo es cierto*, in my opinion it is true.

Por sometimes denotes that the Thing is not yet done ; as, *esta obra está por acabár*, this Work is not yet finished : *por bacerse*, to be done.

It signifies likewise the End of, or Means to do a Thing ; as, *se riñeron pormí*, they quarrelled on my account, &c.

Por, by, for, through ; as *Por estos medios lo alcanzó*, he obtain'd it by these Means ; *fuí al Banco por ducientas libras*, I went to the Bank for 200 l. *pássemos por ésta calle*, let us go through this Street.

Por, though, although, &c. *por pequeña que sea la tomaré*, tho' so small I will take it, altho' it be small. I will take it, and then it denotes a Tense in the Optative, as *por doctor que sea*, though he be a learned Man, &c.

In Composition, as *por tal*, so that ; *por un tal*, for such a one ; *porloque*, *porloqual*, for which ; *Pordonde*, which way ; *porende*, therefore ; *por ésto*, for that Reason ; *porque*, why ; *por ventura*, peradventure, perhaps. But *pro* for *provécho*, as *buen pro le bága*, much good may it do you : *pro*, *el pro*, the reason of a Thing, as *el pró de las Mugéres*, Women's Reason ; *pro y contra*, *pro* and *con*, for and against ; *por acáso*, by chance, by accident ; *por dinéro báila el Pérro*, the Dog dances for Money ; or as we say in English, Money makes the Mare to go.

Primero, Primo, &c.

Are Adjective Ordinals, but with Distinction ; because we use *Primo*, and not *Primero* in the great Numbers, as an Author wrongfully saith ; we don't say *vigésimo primero*, but *vigésimo Primo*, 21st ; *trigésimo primo*, 31st. *Primero* stands sometimes for *primeramente* ; and when it has *lo* before it, it is taken as Substantive ; it is often us'd before and after the Substantives, when before them looses *o*, as *primer lugár*, *lugar primero* ; when an Adverb it signifies first, before, in the first place, rather ; as *primero iré a la Guerra*, *que à la Escuela*, I rather chuse to serve in the War, then to go to School, &c. *Primo*, the first, the best, chiefest, a delicate curious Thing : *Primo* rarely is join'd to any Substantive, because it stands as a Substantive itself, and varies its Termination, and then signifies a Cousin, as *Primo Hermáno*, a Cousin German ; *Prima Hermána*, a she Cousin German : *óbra Prima*, curious Work, the best ; *lo Primo*, the very best, &c.

N O.

Altho' *no*, be a Negative, in questioning it is a Note of Interrogation ; as *me estaré aquí no?* shall I not wait here ? *No me bará este favor?* Will you not do me this favour ? and then it stands for whether or no.

Tanto, Quanto, tan, Quan.

The Adverbs *Tanto*, so much, as much ; *Quanto*, how much, are often put before Substantives, Verbs, &c. to signify the Quantity, Manner, or Circumstances of the Action, &c. as, *por tanto*

comer estás enfermo, you are sick for having eat so much, for over eating ; *Quanto béo me hace mal*, every thing I drink, (all that I drink) does me no good. *Quánto píde por estos güantes?* tanto, how much do you ask for these Gloves? so much. *Tanto quanto*, every thing, so much as ; *tanto mas*, so much more. *Tanto* signifies likewise a Counter to play : *Quánto*, all, every thing, as *quanto dice es falso*, all, what, or every thing he saith is false ; *quanto mas?* how much more ? *quantos?* how many ? *quanto quiera*, how much soever.

Tán, so, as ; as *aquel Páño es tan bueno como este*, that Cloth is as good as this ; *tiene tan buenos amigos*, he hath as good Friends : *quán*, how ; as *quán malo eres*, *y quan bueno te báces entre los Nobles*, O how bad you are, and how good do you make yourself among the Nobility.

Tanbien, so well, as well ; *estoi tan bien convalecido*, I am so well recovered : *esto está tan bien hecho como se pueda hacer*, this is as well done as it could be done ; so that *Tanbien* must not be confounded with *Tambien*, as an Author does, because *también* signifies also, and not as well.

Además.

The Adverb *Además*, signifies, besides, moreover, over and above, in vain ; as *Además, conviene saber que*, besides, moreover, it is to be known that ; *pensarivo además quedó Don Quixote, esperando, &c.* over and above thoughtful remain'd Don Quixote, waiting, &c. Vol. II. Chap. III. *Además se cansa*, takes pains in vain. *Pordemás*, that is, in vain, to no purpose ; it governs likewise Genitive, as *ademas de esto*, besides this, &c.

Según, when before a Verb is an Adverb, and signifies according, as ; as *Según dice Don Juan*, as Sir John

John faith ; it is likewise a Preposition governing the Accusative ; as, *según mi parecer*, according to my Opinion.

Ayúso, an old Adverb, is the same as *abáxo*, below, under ; as *lo ecbáron ayúso*, they throw'd it down, below, under ; it signifies likewise *after* and *under*, as *abáxo* ; as *de Díos en Ayúso*, or *de Díos abáxo yo le curé*, under God, or after God, I am the Person who cured him, or made him well.

Hasta, till, even, up to, as far as ; as, *basta quando?* till when ? *basta que venga*, untill I come ; *basta quanto?* how much ? *basta tanto*, so much ; *basta el borde*, up to the brink ; *basta Palacio*, as far as the Palace ; *basta las doce*, till Noon.

This may serve by way of Specimen, and Practice will teach what can't be so well committed to writing, without far exceeding the Bounds of a Grammar.





THE
SECOND PART
OF THE
SPANISH GRAMMAR,
Called SYNTAX.



THE *Spanish* has so great an Affinity with the *Latin*, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little difficulty in the Construction of the other.

Having hitherto treated of the eight Parts of Speech, as they belong to Etymology, it remains now to treat of them as belonging to the Syntax (called Construction, or the order of Construction.)

C H A P.

C H A P. I.

Of the Concords and Articles.

THERE are three Concords in the Spanish Speech, viz.

1. Between the nominative Case, and the Verb; as, *yo amo*, I love; *Pédro scribe*, Peter writes.
2. Between the Substantive and the Adjective; as, *bombe curioso*, a curious Man; *Muger virtuosa*, a virtuous Woman.
3. Between the Antecedent and the Relative, as *Feliz es, quien vive contento*, happy is he who lives contented, or with content.

Of the first Concord.

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative Case in Number and Person; as *yo Léo*, *tu Apréndes*, *el Maestro enséna*, I read, thou learns, the Master teaches, &c. Note, That many Nominative Cases, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Verb Plural; as, *Pédro y Juán viniéron a verme Ayér*, Peter and John came to see me Yesterday.

Sometimes a whole Clause, and the infinitive Mood of a Verb, may be the Nominative to the Verb following; as, *todo lo que se díxo ayér, me movió á tomar ésta resolución*, all that was said Yesterday moved me to take this Resolution: *el comér satisface al bambriento*, to eat, eating, satisfies the Hungry; *el levantarse tempráno es saludable*, to rise betime in the Morning, is wholsome.

Exceptions.

Exceptions.

When a Question is asked, then the Nominative goes after the Verb ; as, *está el Sr. Fuláno en casa?* is Mr. such a one at home ? *como se entiende ésto?* how is this understood ; *que tiene vmd?* What is the Matter with you ? And so in the Negatives, as *no es ésto?* *no es verdád?* Is it not this ? is it not true ? These Relatives are excepted ; *que bora es?* What is it a Clock ? *quién es?* who is ? *quién toca?* who knocks ? *quién lláma?* who calls, &c.

Some of the Reciprocal Verbs, and the Imperatives of all the Verbs have their Nominative after them ; as, *pésame mucho,* I am very sorry ; *áma tu,* love thou.

When a Verb comes between two Nominatives of diverse Numbers, the Verb may indifferently accord with either of them ; as, *tantas palabras juntas es confusión,* or *son confusión,* so many Words together are a Confusion : *las superfluidades son Exceso* Superfluities are an Excess.

Of the Second Concord.

The Adjective, whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, agreeth with his Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number ; as, *el bóm̄bre sábio, y la Mugér virtuosa son dignos de alabánza,* a learned Man, and a virtuous Woman are worthy of praise ; by which you see how they agree, and that the Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine ; and so it is said *dignos* and not *dignas* : It is likewise plain by the above Example, that, many Substantives with a Conjunction copulative between them will have an Adjective Plural.

When

When a Clause serves as a Substantive, then the Adjective is to be put in the Neuter Gender ; as, *el Rogár a Díos en todo tiempo es bueno* ; *pero en tiempo calamitoso es necesario*, it is always good to pray to God ; but in calamitous time it is necessary.

Exceptions.

Before the Nouns Substantives beginning with *a*, *Euboniae gratia*, for the sake of the good Sound, the Spaniards use the Masculine Article, as has been said before, as *el agua*, the Water ; *al alma*, the Soul ; which proceeds from the Spaniards not using the Apostrophe, as some other Nations do, &c.

After *Vuestra Merced* the Adjective does not agree in Gender with *v.m.d.* but with the Person to whom one speaks, as we observ'd before ; so that when we speak to a Man, we say, *bien venido sea v.m.d.* Sir you art welcome ; and in the Plural, *bien venidos sean v.m.d.es*, Gentlemen you are welcome ; when to a Woman, *vmd. es muy buena*, Madam you are very good, &c.

Note, That *Bueno*, *malo*, *úno*, *primero*, *tercero*, &c. when before a Substantive, they lose the Letter *o* ; and *ciénto* loses *to* : and tho' some Authors are of Opinion, that *tanto* and *quanto* lose *to* before the Substantives, I say, that it is false, and wrong ; because *tanto* and *quanto* always remain whole, and are derived of the Latin Adverbs *Tanto*, *quanto* ; as, *quanto Mayor éres*, *tanto mas te humillarás*, how much the greater you are, so much the more you should be humbled. But *tán* and *quán* are derived from the Latin *tam* and *quam*.

Grande, loses *de* before the Substantives that begin with a Consonant ; as, *gran Mugér*, a great Woman ; *Gran Cása*, a great House : but if the Substantive begins with *a* then it is often indifferently

differently used, and when begins with another Vowel always retains *de*.

Observe likewise, that the Spaniards do generally use the Adjectives after the Substantives, as it has been said : but the Epithets are used by the best Spanish Authors before the Substantives ; as, *el Seráptico San Francisco*, the Seraphick St Francis ; *el Melifluo St Bernardo*, the Mellifluous St Bernard ; *el intrépido General*, the intrepid General ; *el Philósofo Aristoteles*, the Philosopher Aristotle : *Sanctissimo Pádre*, *Beatissimo Pádre*, the Holy Father ; *Excelentissimo Señor*, most excellent Sir ; *ilusterrísmo Señor*, most illustrious Sir, &c. and so we say *es buen hombre*, he is a good Man ; *este es un mal hombre*, this is a bad Man.

Of the third Concord.

The Antecedent is a Word, or Clause that goes before the Relative, and is rehearsed again by the Relative.

The Relative agreeth with his Antecedent in Gender, Number and Person ; as, *es sabio*, *quien habla poco y bien*, that Man is wise, that speaketh but little and to the purpose.

When a Relative is between two Antecedents of diverse Genders, then it agreeth with either ; as, *el Rey se irá luego a una casa de campo*, *la que está en Windsor*, the King will soon go to a Country House, which is at Windsor ; *he recibido tres cartas*, *cuyo contenido me gusta mucho*, I have receiv'd three Letters, whose Contents please me much ; *atacaron al Enemigo*, *cuya infantería tomó luego la derrota*, they attack'd the Enemy, whose Foot soon gave way and fled.

Sometimes the Relative hath for his Antecedent the whole Sentence that goeth before it, and then it must be put in the Neuter Gender, and in the Singular

lar Number ; as, *alzáronse los soldados en el fuerte contra su Gobernador, lo que le obligó a entregarle,* the Soldiers revolted in the Fort or Fortress against their Governor, which oblig'd him to deliver it up.

Many Antecedents Singular having a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Relative Plural, which shall agree with the Antecedent of the most worthy Gender ; as, *recibí el Caballo y la Mula que me envió, los que presenté al Sr. Fulano,* I receiv'd the Horse and the Mule that you sent me, which I presented to Mr such a one.

When there is no Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative stands for the Nominative ; as, *quien dice esto ?* who saith this? but when there is a Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative shall be put in the Case governed by the Verb, or any other Word ; as, *la gracia que le pido,* the Favour which I beg of you ; *el Rey á quien obedezco,* the King to whom I obey ; *el Embaxadór, de cuya protección gozo,* me escribe ésta carta, the Embassador whose Protection I enjoy, wrote this Letter to me.

Note, that the Relatives you may make use of, are *le, les, la, lo, las, los*; (to these four last you may add *que* ; as, *la que, lo que, las que, los que*) *quien, tal, qual, cuyo, que* ; to which you may likewise add a Preposition ; as, *á lo que Digo,* to which I say ; *de lo que recibí gusto,* of which I received Pleasure ; *de quien es ?* to whom it belongs ? *pára quién ? para él ?* for whom ? for him ; *cuyo es este sombrero ?* then you may answer, *mío, tuyo, or suyo,* or *del Sr. Fulano, de aquel Caballero,* mine, thine, or yours, or of Mr such a one, of that Gentleman.

Observe likewise, that these Relatives are called elliptic Articles, because they express the Substantive which is not there ; as, *recibí la de v. md,* la for *la carta,* I received yours ; *leí los libros de Quevedo, pero los del Padre Feijoo no,* I read Quevédos

do's Books, but not those of Father Feijoo ; and then they govern the Case of the Substantive ; as *recibí la de Pédro*, *pero no la de Juán*, I receiv'd that of Peter's, but not that of John, &c.

Of the Articles.

There are three Articles in Spanish, as is said before, viz. *el* for the Masculines, *la* for the Feminines, and *lo* for the Neuters ; and it can't be taken amiss, if I shew here the manner, how they are to be used.

First, All proper Names of Men, Women, Gods, Goddesses, Angels good or bad ; of Months, Cities, Towns, and Villages, &c. have no Article before them ; as, *Pbelipe V. Rey de España Luis XV. Rey de Fráncia* ; *Jórgel II. Rey de Inglaterra*, &c. Philip V. King of Spain, &c. *Carolína Reina de Inglaterra*, Calorine Queen of England : *Jupiter*, *Júno*, *Lucrécia*, St *Miguél*, St Michael ; *Enero*, January ; *Febrero*, February, &c.

Secondly, If we put an Adjective between proper Names, or express their Epithets, or specify some Action, Passion, or Motion, and take notice of their Qualities, &c. then we put the Article before them ; as, *el Omnipotente Dios*, *el Dios de Misericordia* ; the Almighty God, the God of Mercy ; *el invencible e intrépido Generál*, the invincible, and intrepid General : *el Rey*, *la Reina*, *el Príncipe*, *la Princesa*, *y el Dúque de Cumberland irán à la comedia éste noche*, the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Princess, and the Duke of Cumberland will go to the Play-house this Night ; and so before other common Words.

Thirdly, Before the Numerals is never made use of the Article, but when they are taken relatively ; as, *los dos viniéron*, the two came ; *los doce meses del año*, the twelve Months of the Year ; *los siete días de la*

de la semana, the seven Days of the Week ; las doce Tribus, los doce Apóstoles, los doce pares de Francia, las quatro partes del Mundo, &c. and so are uno, otro, qual, the Participles, and some of the Infinitives ; as, el uno, the one, &c. lo dicbo, the above said, el comér, el beber y el dormir, con Moderación, bacén bien al cuérpo, to eat, to drink, and to sleep with Moderation, does good to the Body.

The Particle *an* so much us'd in English is omitted in Spanish ; for tho' we say, another Man, another Day, they only say as the Latin, *otro hombre*, *otro día*, not *un otro hombre*, or *un otro día*.

España has but seldom an Article, and Sardëña, Portugál, Sicilia, and Cárdia never.

C H A P. II.

Of the Construction of Nouns.

WHEN two Substantives of diverse Significations, do so come together, that the Latter in some kind or other seem to be possessed, or depend of the former, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case ; as, *el amor de Dios es mas perfecto*, the Love of God is the most perfect : *amor del Padre*, the Love of a Father ; *la Ternéza de la Madre*, the Tenderness of a Mother ; *la Eloquencia de Cicerón*, the Eloquence of Cicero, &c. And often this Genitive is turned into an Adjective ; as, *el amor Divino*, the Divine Love ; *el Amor Paterno*, the fatherly Love ; *la Ternéza Materna*, the Motherly Tenderness, &c.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put alone without a Substantive, standeth for a Substantive, and

and may have a Genitive Case after it ; *déme un poco de lo mucho, y algo de lo poco*, give me a little of the much, and something of the little you have ; *lo prudente de Don Pedro nos admira*, the prudent Part of Don Peter surprises us, &c.

The Nouns of Praise, and Dispraise, of Want, of Arts, Sciences, all proper Names of Cities, Towns, &c. of God, all proper Names of Men, Women, Spirits good and bad, of irrational Creatures, of inanimates, of Months, Nouns of Measure, &c. coming after a Noun Substantive, or a Verb Substantive may be put with the Preposition *de* ; as *Mucháculo de buén ingénio*, a Boy of a good Wit ; *bómbre de mal Credito*, a Man of bad Credit or Reputation ; *Maestro de Musica*, a Master of Music ; *Professór de Theología*, a Professor of Divinity ; *la Cása de Pédro*, Peter's House ; *la ciudád de Lóndres*, the City of London ; *la voluntád de Dios*, the Will of God, &c.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is put alone, the former Substantive being understood by Eclipsis ; as *recibí dos Cártas, la de Pédro leí, pero no la de mi Correspondiente*, I receiv'd two Letters, I read that of Peter's, but not that of my Correspondent.

Of the Construction of Adjectives.

Adjectives that signify Desire, Knowledge, Remembrance, Ignorance, or Forgetting, and such other like require a Genitive ; as *codicioso de dinéro*, covetous of Money ; *ignorante de todo*, ignorant of all things, &c.

Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of Numbers, require Genitive ; as *algún, ningún, solo, úno, qualquiér, dos, tres, Primero, segundo, &c.* *algún de vosotros*, somebody of you, *el primero de vosotros*, the first of you.

Rómulo

Rómulo fue el Primero de los Reyes de Roma, Romulus was the first of the Kings of Rome; *de que se tráta en Londres?* *de Guerra*, what are you about in London? or what talke you in London? of War; *de quien se bábla?* *de los Turcos*, of whom speak they? of the Turks.

Adjectives signifying Fulness, Emptiness, Plenty, or Want, require *de*; as, *lleno de agua*, full of Water; *falto de juicio*, without his Senses. And sometime they require the Preposition *en*; as *abundante de todo*, or *en todo*, plentiful, or well stored with every Thing; *Rico de bienes*, or *en bienes temporales*, *y Pobre de los*, or *en los espirituales*, rich in temporal Goods, and poor in the spiritual, &c.

Digno, and *indigno*, require a Genitive; as, *sói digno*, or *indigno de bonra*, I am worthy or unworthy of Honour. But *adornado*, *contento*, *descontento*, *alegre*, &c. will have *de* or *con*, as, *este quarto está adornado de preciosas alájas*, or *con preciosas alájas*, this Room is adorned with fine Furniture; *Contento* and *Descontento*, require likewise *en*, as, *estó contento de ésto*, *con ésto*, or *en ésto*, I am contented with this, &c.

Adjectives, whereby is signified Profit, Disprofit, Likeness, Unlikeness, submitting or belonging to something, govern à Dative Case; as, *útil*, *provechoso*, *cómodo*, *Bueno*, *conveniente*, *gustoso*, *malo*, *rendido*; *iguál*, *desigual*, *semejante*, *parecido*, *conforme*, &c. as, *será útil à Pédro el trabajár*, working will be profitable to Peter; and so are those of Affinity, which likewise are construed with a Genitive; as, *sói Pariénte de Fuláno* or à *Fuláno*, I am a Relation of, or to such a one.

Add to these some of the Verbals in *ble*, as *amable*, *dable*, &c.

N. B. That the Nouns of Measure of Length, Breadth, or Thickness of any Thing, is put in the Accusative, and the Adjective in the Genitive; as, *esta torre tiene cién pies de alto*, this Tower is one hundred Feet

R high;

high; éste Páño tiéne dos várás de áncbo, this Cloth has two Yards in Breadth.

Some Adjectives govern the Ablative Case; as, *con*, or *en la cólera estó amarillo*, *y con la ira colérico*, *y con sus amenázas temeroso*, I am pale for being angry, angry with Wrath, and with his Threatning timorous.

There are Ablatives Absolutes, (so called for their having no dependance in the Speech) as *acabada la cena*, the Supper being finished, or having supt; *quitada la Causa*, *césa el efecto*, the Cause being remov'd, the effect ceased.

The Ablative of the Instrument is made in Spanish with the Preposition *con*, with; as *lo hice con el Martillo*, I have done it with the Hammer.

The Words *experto*, *experimentado*, *Perito*, *versado*, *cursado*, &c. require an Ablative with *en*; as *versado en libros*, versed in Books.

Of the Numerals.

The Numerals may be divided into Cardinals; as, *uno*, *dos*, *tres*, &c.

Ordinals; as, *Primero*, *segundo*, *tercero*, &c.

Distributives, as, *de uno en uno*, *de dos en dos*, *de tres en tres*, &c.

Partitives, as *cada uno*, *uno y otro*, *algún*, &c.

Collectives, as *una docena*, *quincena*, *veintena*, *treintena*, &c. a dozen and no more in English, they saying in its stead twenty, thirty, &c. *el quinto*, the fifth; *la diézma*, a tenth, &c.

Of Augmentation; as *lo doble*, *lo triple*, *lo quadruple*, &c.

Universal, as *todo*, *ningún*, *nada*.

Particular; as, *algún*, *alguien*, &c.

All which govern the Genitive Case; as, *el Primero de todos*, the first of all.

Of the Comparatives.

The Comparatives *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less, govern *que*, than, in which the force of the Comparison lies ; *el todo es Mayór que la parte*, the Whole, or the Compound is greater or bigger than the Part ; *su Malicia es peór que la de el diablo*, it's Malice is worse than that of the Devil's ; and so in *mejór*, *menor*. Now for the Regular Comparatives ; as, *es mas sábio que Salomón*, is wiser than Solomon ; *es mas Hermosa que Rachel*, is more beautiful than Rachel ; *es ménos prudente que su Hermano*, is less prudent than his Brother.

They govern likewise *deloque*, than what ; as, *es mas Doctor deloque se piensa*, is more learned than what it is thought ; *es mas afortunado deloque merece*, is more lucky than what he deserves.

When the Articles *el*, *la*, *lo* are put before *mas*, then it governs the Genitive ; as, *es el mas discreto de los hombres*, he is the discreetest of Men ; *la mas afable de todas las Mugéres*, the most affable of all Women ; *lo mas selecto de todo*, the most select of all, of every Thing.

They govern also the Preposition *entre* ; as, *es la mas Hermosa entre todas las Mugéres*, is the most beautiful among all Women ; *es el mas Doctor entre todos los del Colegio*, is the most learned among all those of the College. Some Spanish Writers put *de* before *entre* ; as, *es el mas señalado de entre sus condiscípulos*, is the most signified from among his School-Fellows. By which the curious may observe the several Constructions that the Comparatives will bear.

The Examples with the Article before *mas*, are called Relative Superlatives, and the following absolute or independing ; which end in *íssimo* *íssima* *érrimo-ma*, &c. as *prudentíssimo*, most discreet ;

discreet ; *próximo*, nearest ; *minimo*, the least, the smallest ; *acérri mo*, most vehement, most obstinate. When the Adverb *mui*, very, is before the Positive, then the Positive is made Superlative ; as
 Doctíssimo, } *Mui Docto*, very learned.
 Prudentíssimo, } *Mui Prudénte*, very prudent, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of PRONOUNS.

NO S, and *Vos*, though in reality they signify the same as *Nosotros*, and *Vosotros*, that is, We, and Ye ; yet they differ in the use, and in that the two latter have the Feminine Gender, *Nosotras* and *Vosotras*, which the other have not, being always the same in all Genders. *Nosotros* is in all common use, as *We* with us ; but *Nos*, is generally used by a single Person, as a Sovereign, or the like, where *We* is also employed in English. But sometimes *Nos* signifies *Us*, when it follows a Verb, as *dádnos de comér*, give us to eat ; *guiádnos a la casa*, lead us to the House ; and after *no*, as *no nos maltráteys*, do not abuse us.

Vos, is also apply'd to a single Person, that is in speaking to inferiors, or between familiar Friends, to avoid the word *tu*, thou ; which is too gross in Spanish, as has been said before, and to save the respect of *V. M.* also above spoken of ; thus they say, *vos os engañáis*, you are mistaken : and so before Verbs Plural, as *vos amáis*, you love ; *vos perdéis*, you lose ; but in the other Cases the *v* is cut off ; as *yo os dáre*, I will give you ; *el os llevará*,

llevará, he will carry you ; and the same when it follows the Verb ; as *quitáos de abí*, get you from thence ; and so in many other Cases.

Note, That *Los*, *Las*, are construed with the first and second Persons of the Plural ; as, *losque sómos Chriſtianos, vivámos como tales*, We that are Christians, let us live as such. *Dicen los Apóstoles, que lasque sómos casadas obedescámos á los Maridos*, The Apostles say, that we married should obey the Husbands : *Losque fuéredes Chriſtianos, observad y cumplid los Preceptos de Díos*, you that are Christian, keep and accomplish the Commandments of God, &c.

El, and *Ella* have a Dative Case of a different Termination, which is contrary to the general Spanish Rule ; for they sometimes make *le* and *les*, and these two are only used, when they imply something of Acquisition, and denote the Person receiving ; as, *Vi a Pedro y díle*, or *le di sus cartas*, I saw Peter and gave him his Letters. *Vide mis amigos, y comuniquéles mis cuidados*, I saw my Friends, and imparted my Affairs to them ; where it appears in both places, there is an imparting, or giving. In these Cases there is no using of *lo*, or *los* for *le*, or *les*, because it would breed Confusion, as will appear in this Instance, *Los que perdieron sus baziéndas, píden a los juezes, que los abórquen los ladrónes*, They that have been robb'd of their Goods, require of the Judges that they hang the Thieves. Now were it said, *Píden a los juézess que los abórken los ladrónes*, there would be no deciding whether they requir'd that the Thieves should be hang'd, or that the Thieves should hang them.

Mi, ti, si, are used after Prepositions ; as *a mi*, to me ; *pára ti*, for you ; *por si*, by himself ; but after *con*, with, they must all have the Syllable *go* added to them ; as *con mígo*, with me ; *con tígo*, with you ; *con sígo*, with himself.

Me, te, se, are join'd to Verbs, and stand for the Dative, and Accusative Cases ; as, *díxome*, he told me ; *servíte*, to serve you ; *amárse*, to love himself.

They may also be placed before the Verb, provided a Nominative Case is before them ; as *yo me iré*, I will be gone ; *tu te irás*, you will be gone ; *el se irá*, he will be gone ; sometimes the Nominative Case is not expressed, but always understood ; as *mé áma*, he loves me ; where *el* is understood, as *el*, he ; or *Juan*, John, or *Pédro*, Peter.

Observe here, that *me, te, se*, sometimes are us'd in the Dative by the Figure Pleonasm ; as, *ó señor ! y à donde os me llevan ?* O Lord ! where are they going to carry you from me ? *Quien te se me cubrió de dolor ?* Who is he that came here to cover or fill you up with Grief ? instead of *quién te cubrió de dolor ?*

Se before the third Person of a Verb, generally signifies what we express by *it is*, or *they* ; as, *se dice*, it is said, or reported, or they say, or report ; for if it be used to signify himself, as has been observed above, it is usual to add *a si*, or *a si mismo*, which denotes himself ; as, *se áma a si mismo*, he loves himself.

La, le, lo, las, les, los, me, te, se, nos, and vos, are frequently joined to Verbs ; as, *oírélə*, I will hear her ; *diréle*, I will tell him ; *barélo*, I will do it ; *llevárélos*, I will carry them ; *escriviréles*, I will write to them ; *despedirélos*, I will dismiss them ; *iréme*, I will be gone ; *véte*, be you gone ; *váyase*, let him be gone ; *passeémonos*, let us walk ; but in joining *vos* to the Verb, the *v* is always cut off ; as, *amáros*, to love you, not *amárvos* ; and if the Verb be the third Person Plural of the Imperative Mood, the last Letter of it which is always *d*, must be also cut off ; as, *calentáos*, warm yourselves, and so in others.

When *le, lo, las, los*, are joined to the Infinitive Mood, the last *r* of it is sometimes changed into *l*, for the softer Sound, as for *dezírlc*, say *dezíllc* ; but this is no general Rule.

Note,

Note, That when a Relative is referred to a Noun Masculine, then we make use of *le*, when to a Feminine of *la*, when to a whole Sentence or Clause of *lo* in the Neuter.

Mío, túyo, suyo, nuéstro, vuéstro, and mísmo, have the Article added to them, when they are spoken absolutely, and without a Substantive ; as, *lo mío*, what is mine ; *lo túyo*, what is thine. Unless they are spoken in Answer to a Question ; as if it be asked, *Cúyo es éste caballo?* whose Horse is this? the Answer is, *mío, túyo, or suyo*, mine, yours, or his.

Cúyo is naturally an Interrogation ; as, *cúyo es ésto?* Whose is this? But it is often us'd to signify the Person a Thing belongs to ; as *El hombre cúyo es éste caballo*, the Man whose Horse this is, or to whom this Horse belongs.

Mi, tu, su, Plur. mis, tus, sus, are us'd for mío, túyo, suyo ; but always before a Substantive ; as, mi casa, my House ; tu libro, your Book ; su cara, his Face ; mis guantes, my Gloves ; tus espuelas, your Spurs ; sus papéles, his Papers.

'Este, ésse, aquél, are all Demonstratives ; but éste denotes a Thing near the Person speaking ; ésse, a Thing rather near him that is spoken to ; and aquél, that which is at a Distance from both ; as, éste cuchillo, this Knife ; ésse Pláto, that Dish ; aquél pérro, that Dog. The same is to be understood of the Feminine Gender of these Words, *'Esta, éssa, aquélla*, and of the Neuter, *'Esto, éssó, aquéllo* ; and so of the Plural Number of them, *'Estos, éssos, aquéllos, éstas, éssas, aquéllas*. *Aquél* pronounced with energy, stands for the first Person Singular, and *aquéllos* for the first Plural ; as, *yo aquél que en los pasados tiempos cante, &c.* I he who in former Times sung, &c.

The Relatives, or Interrogatives. *Quál*, sometimes is interrogatory, as *Quál déllos?* which of them? and sometimes Comparative, as *Quál es el veráno, tal el inviérno*, Such as the Summer is, such

is the Winter ; and sometimes it is distributive, as *Quál coge el oro, quál la pláta*, One gathers the Gold, another the Silver.

Que tal, differs herein from *Quál*, that the latter asks the particular Person, or Thing, and is *Which of them?* whereas the other questions the Quality of the Person, or Thing, as *Que tal es éste caballo?* What sort of Horse is that ?

Que is also an Interrogation, as *Que dizes?* What do you say ? It is also Demonstrative, as *El Hombre que bábla*, The Man that speaks. It also signifies than ; as, *Mas vale bablár poco, que bablár mal*, It is better to say little than to talk amiss. It is sometimes in the Nature of an Exclamation, as *Que Desgracia !* What a Misfortune ! *Que linda mugér !* What a fine Woman ! *Que*, the same as *that*, as *que yo váya*, that I may go ; *Qué* for *porqué*, why, because ; as, *bazlo tu, qué yo no puédo*, do it thou, because I can't. Observe that *áque* is not one Spanish Word, because à is a Preposition, and denotes to, and then is not an Adverb, for à *que*, is the same as *to what End, to what Purpose* ; as à *que vinó éste hombre !* we understand, à *que fin*, to what end came this Man ? à *que juégo perdió su dinéro ?* At what, or at which Game did you loose your Money ? And always is a Relative, the same as *quál*, or *cuyo*, &c.

C H A P. IV.

Of V E R B S.

Properly speaking, the Spanish Verbs have only these following simple Tenses, viz. the Present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, and the Future, of the Indicative Mood ; the Imperative Mood ; and the Present, Preterimperfect, and Future, of the Optative or Subjunctive ; as

Indicative,

Indicative,

Present.	'Amo,	I love.
Preterimperf.	Amába,	I did love.
Preterperfect.	Amé,	I have loved.
Future.	Amaré,	I shall, or will love.

Imperative,

'Ama,	Do you love.
-------	--------------

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.	Plégá a Díos que yo áme,	God grant I love.
Preterim.	Amára, amásie, or amaria,	Would to God I did love.
Future.	Amáre,	When I shall love.

Infinitive,

Present.	Amár,	To love.
Gerund.	Amándo,	Loving.
Participle Passive.	Amádo,	Loved.

All the rest are formed by Circumlocution, putting several Words together to supply the Defect of such Tenses, as it has been said before.

And altho' there has been said enough of this Part of Speech in Part II. yet as the Verbs are the principal and most essential Part of a Grammar, I think it proper to observe here what none of the Grammarians has taken notice of before, in order to remove the several Difficulties that start to Beginners.

1. Verbs Substantives, and certain Passive Verbs, as *ser*, *ser llamado*, *ser Nombrado*, with other like will have such Case after them, as they have before them, that is the Nominative Case; as, *Pédro es hombre*, Peter is a Man; *yo me llamo Juan*, I am call'd John, &c. all Verbs of Gesture, that is those that betoken bodily moving, going, resting, or doing; as also all the Verbs that have the Word that goeth before, and the Word that comes after, both belonging to one Thing, require the Nominative after them; as, *Pédro vá cójo*, Peter goeth lame; *el Rey duerme segúro*, the King sleepeth void of Care, &c. Also the Verb of the Infinitive Mood

has

has the same Cases, when Verbs of wishing and the like come near them ; as, *Pédro desea ser santo*, Peter wisheth to be Holy : *Yo antes quisiéra ser Rico, que parecerlo*, I had rather be rich, than to be accounted so, &c.

2. Of the Auxiliary Verbs. *Haver* governs the Accusative ; as, *Pédro bá el libro*, Peter hath the Book. *Estar*, when it signifies to be in a Place, requires the Ablative with *en* ; but when to be with somebody, an Ablative with *con* ; as, *estaré v. md en su casa!* will you be at home ? *Yo estaré en la Lónja*, I shall be on the Change ; *estoi con v. md*, I am with you ; here *con* is used for shortness, because the meaning is, *Yo estoy en compañia de v. md*, I am in your Company. Observe this Phrase, *estar en ésto, en ello, &c. está v. md. en ésto?* do you remember of that ? have you observed, or taken notice of that ? are you in the same Mind, &c. *Ser* when it signifies Possession, or pertaining to a Thing, will have the Genitive ; (except when the Pronouns *mío, túyo, suyo, nuéstro, vuéstro* are to be us'd, because then they are in the Nominative ; as, *este libro es mío, &c.*) as, *éste Péine es de mi Mugér*, this Comb belongs to my Wife. But when it denotes the Property of a Thing, it has a Dative after it ; as, *ésto es para mi*, this is for me ; *es à Pedro*, it belongs to Peter, &c. Note, That *mí, tí si*, seldom can be put in the Genitive by themselves, or without a Substantive ; tho' they may in the Dative ; as, *es de mi Hermáno*, it belongs to my Brother ; you may say, *es pára mi, para tí, para si*, is for me, for you, for him : except *de tí à Muger digo ésto*, of you O my Wife I say this ; *como báblas tan mal de mi?* why do you speak so bad of me, &c.

Of the Genitive.

Verbs signifying Grief, Compassion, Remembrance, Want, Forgetting, &c. will have a Genitive ; as, *Pesame de la Muerte de su Padre*, I am sorry

Sorry for the Death of your Father : *Me compadéscó de sus hijas*, I pity his Daughters ; *Caresco, necesito de dineros*, I want Money. And thus *de* is put before the Thing spoke in the Speech, *es menester accordarse de lo que me dixo*, it is necessary to remember of what you said to me : *Me olvidé de esto*, I forgot that.

The Reciprocals of geering, boasting, and distrusting, govern the Genitive, as *vanagloriarse, pi-carse, desconfiarse, &c.*

Of the Dative.

Active Verbs have either Dative or Accusative; as, *conóscó esta Létra*, I know this Writing ; *conosco à Don António su Amigo*, I know Don Anthony your Friend.

The Prepositions of the Dative are *à* or *pára*.

To this Rule of the Dative belong the Verbs,
Jugár, to play ; as, *Júego à los náipes*, I play at Cards.

Obedecér, desobedecér, &c. Obedesco al Rey, I obey the King.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an Army, &c. requires the Accusative ; when other Things, the Dative ; as, *el Dúque de Montemár Mandó el Exército Espanhol en Itália*, the Duke of Montemar commanded the Spanish Army in Italy ; *el Rey mandó al Embaxadór de Venécia de salir de Londres en tres días*, the King ordered the Venetian Ambassador to go out of London in three Days.

Ir, to go ; as, *vóii à Roma*, I go to Rome.

Assistir, to help or assist ; as, *assisstiré à Pédro*, I will help or assist Peter.

Saludár, to salute ; as, *saludó à Fuláno*, he saluted such a one. *Hablár*, to speak ; *llamár*, to call ; *satisfacér*, to satisfy ; *servir*, to serve, *favorecér*, to favour ; *desafiár*, to challenge ; *absolvér*, to absolve ; *aconsejár*, to give Advice ; *Amenazár*, to threaten : The Verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying,

ing, pardoning, and so all manner of Verbs put acquisitively, that is, with these Tokens *to*, or *for*, after them, will have a Dative Case of the Person, and often the Accusative of the Thing.

The Impersonals *acontecer*, *avenir*, *convenir*, *importar*, *pertenecer*, *placer*, and the like to these, will have often two Datives of Person; as, *à mí me aconteció*, it happened to me; *à tí te conviene*, it is convenient for you; *no le importa à él*, it does not concern him, &c.

The Accusative.

The Latin Verbs, which govern the Accusative of the Thing, and the Dative of the Person, govern generally the same in Spanish; as, *restituíd al César lo que pertenece al César*, render ye to Cesar what is belonging to Cesar; *dí el libro al Impresor*, I gave the Book to the Printer, &c.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying; also most of the Verbs Transitives, viz. all such as have after them an Accusative Case of the Doer, or Sufferer, whether they be Active, or Commune, and sometimes the Verbs Neuters, will have an Accusative of the Thing; as, *Gózo salud*, I enjoy Health; *pido ésta Gracia, ruego ésta favor*, I ask this Favour; *tocar el Orgáno*, to play on the Organ.

Generally all the Active Verbs require an Accusative or Dative; as, *amár à Dios*, *bacér bien*, to do good; *Guardar los Mandamientos de Dios*, to keep God's Commandments; *descubrir la verdád*, to discover the Truth; *ganár el pléito*, to get the Suit of Law.

Ser, to be; sometimes governs an Accusative, in the Infinitive; as, *es bueno ser hombre honrado*, it is good to be an honest Man.

Of the Ablative.

All Passive Verbs, and generally most of the Reciprocals, will have the Ablative with *de*; as, *sói amado de mi Pádre*, I am loved of my Father; *me levanto de la Cáma*, I get up from the Bed; except *acostárse*, *recoztárse*, *sentarse*, which have the Ablative with *en*.

The Price of a Thing is put after Verbs in the Accusative with *por*; as, *lo compré por un péso*, I bought it for a piece of Eight; *lo vendí por tres reales*, or *a tres reáles la yárda*, I sell it at three Reals per Yard.

Verbs of Plenty, Filling, Emptying, Loading, or Unloading, will have an Ablative; as, *abúndo de riquezas*, I abound of Riches; *te llenaré de oprobrios*, I will load you with Injuries, &c.

Verbs that betoken Receiving, or Distance, or taking away, will have an Ablative; as, *recibí mil pesos de Pédro*, I received one thousand Pieces of Eight of Peter: *Kensington dista tres millas de Londres*, Kensington is three Miles from London.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. require the Ablative with *con*; as, *arguir*, *renir*, *pelear*. The Verbs that govern in Latin these Prepositions *a*, *ex*, *ab*, will have in Spanish an Ablative with *de*, if *cum*, *con*; *pro*, *por*; *post*, *despues*; *usque*, *basta*, &c.

Observe at the last, that the following Rules are retained by the Spanish Authors, for the Verbs, viz.

1. If the Word governed by the Verb signifies a thing animate, generally it is put in the Dative Case; as, *vói à ver à mi Padre*, I go to see my Father, *amo à mi Mádre*, I love my Mother.

The Verbs of Motion to a Place, always govern the Dative; as, *vói à Madrid*, I go to Madrid: the Verbs of Motion, from a Place, govern the Ablative with *de*; as, *vengo de Espáña*, I come from Spain; if the Action, Motion, or Passion is through

a Thing or Place, then the Verbs govern the Accusative with *por*; as, *vendré por Paris*, I shall come by way of Paris; *sufrí por v. md*, I suffered for you, &c.

3. To express a Thing indifferently, the Spaniards always use the Accusative Case; as *tráigo pan y vino*; as in Latin, *affero panem & vinum*.

4. The Verbs *vér*, to see; *mirár*, to look; differ; because *vér* requires Accusative; as, *vér el Palacio*, to see the Palace; and *mirár*, Dative and Accusative, as *Míro el juégo*; *míro à los que juégan*, but when they signify to look for one, then they govern the Accusative with *por*; as *Estó mirando por v. md*, I am looking for you.

Of the Particles requisite to some Tenses.

5. The Present Tense of the Subjunctive, &c. and the first and second Preterimperfects of the said Mood, are construed with *que*, *paraque*, *porque*, *aunque*, *bienque*, *oxala*, *supuestoque*, *puesto que*, *da doque*, *a fin que*, *conque*, *puesque*, &c. as,

Es bueno que yo váya, it is good, that I go.

Paraque el venga, To the end that he may come.

Porque tu aprendieses à orár, for that you might learn how to pray.

Aunque el venga, &c. altho he come, &c.

Afin que Aprendiera, ò *aprendiese*, to the end that he might learn, &c.

The impersonal Verbs generally govern the Subjunctive with *que*, but with this Distinction; that when the impersonal is in the Present Tense, or Future of the Indicative Mood, then they always govern the present of the Subjunctive Mood; but when the Impersonal (or any other Verb taken impersonally) is in any of the Preterits of the Indicative, then it governs the Imperfect, the Perfect, the Plus-

perfect,

perfect, or the Future of the Subjunctive, according to the meaning of the Speech ; as,

Conviene or *Convendrá*, que el Rey en Persona Comande el Exército, it is convenient, or it will be convenient, that the King in Person do command the Army.

Convino que el Príncipe fuésse con el, it was convenient that the Prince should go with him.

The Present Subjunctive is likewise construed with the Particles *por sutil*, *por Doctó*, *por sábio*, *por pequeño*, *por Grande*, &c. but *por* stands there for *aunque*, although ; as,

Qualquiera cosa cosa por pequeña que sea hace su papel en el mundo, any thing, although it be little or small, does some service in the World, that is, serves for some Thing or Purpose in the World.

An Imperative often requires the Present, the first and second Preterimperfect, and the Future of the Subjunctive Mood, as, *sea loque sea*, let it be as it will, altho' it be so : *sea loque fuéra* or *fuésse*, let the Thing be, or happen as it would ; *sea loque fuére*, happen what it shall happen, at all Events.

All the Tenses of the Subjunctive may be construed with *luégoque*, *quando*, *si*, *como*, *aunque* ; but *plégá à Dios*, and *sea Dios servido*, require only the Present Subjunctive ; and *plugiéra* or *pluguiésse*, *fuéra* or *fuésse* *Dios servido* may be construed with all the Tenses of the Subjunctive, except the Present Tense.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood requires *si*, *quando*, *aunque*, *ò y como*, *de gusto*, *con gusto*, *de mui buena ò mala gana*, *ò quan de gana*, *por ventura*, *acaso*, &c.

Pues, *puesque*, *aunque*, *oomo*, *quando*, *luégo*, may be construed with all the Tenses of the Indicative Mood ; as, *quando víne del campo*, *caí del caballo*, *pues perdí el estribo*, when I came from the Country I fell from the Horse, because I lost the Stirrup, &c.

The

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood is sometimes construed by Circumlocution, viz. with the Infinitive and the Words, *bía*, *bías*, *bía*, &c. as *bablarte bía* (for *hablaría*), *escribirle bía por el correo* (for *escribiriale*), *abrazárla bía* (for *abrazaríala*) ; and the Reader will find, that if the Pronoun and the Letter *b* are taken away, it remains that Tense ; as, if from *bablarte bía*, *te* and *b* is taken, there it will remain *bablaría*. And although some Authors are of Opinion that *bablarte bía*, stands for *bablarte íba*, I was going to speak to you ; yet Father *Valéra* observes that that manner of speaking is a Circumlocution proper to the third Preterimperfect, and often used in the Spanish Poetry, adding *b* to *íá* by the Figure Epenthesis, to denote that the Accent should lie on the *í*, as *bacerle bía bien*, *si fueras bueno*, (*bacerle biá* for *baria*) he would do good for you, if you was good.

The second Future of the Indicative Mood, which is made by the Auxiliary Verb *havér*, is construed with Elegancy with the Particles *me*, *te*, *se*, *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, at the End of the Infinitive ; as, *Guíarme has* for *me guiarás*, or rather for *has de guiárme*, you must guide me ; *darte hé mi bija en casamiento* for *be de darte*, or *te daré mi bija en casamiento*, I will or must give you my Daughter in Marriage ; *darte la be*, for *be de dártele*, or *te la daré*, I will give her to you.

7. The English Tongue has one Sign to the Infinitive, viz. *to* ; and in Spanish there is none for the Infinitive, as Infinitive, as *Amár*, to love ; *Leér*, to read ; *oír*, to hear : Altho' there are several Particles used in Spanish before the Infinitive, they are governed by other preceeding Verbs or Nouns Substantives, and these are *a*, *pára*, *de*, *con*, *en*, *por*, *basta*, *despuesde*, and *el* when the Infinitive serves as a Nominative to another Verb.

C H A P. V.

Of Prepositions.

THE Cases to be given to some Parts of Speech, being one principal Part of Syntax, and there being properly no Cases in *Spanish*, as there are in *Latin*, we will therefore treat of the Prepositions, which answer the End of the *Latin* Cases.

When the Noun in Speech denotes the Person possessing, or signifies whose a Thing is, we always make use of the Preposition *de*; as, *'Esto libro es de Juan*, This is John's Book; unless we use the positive Degree of that same Person, making it an Adjective to the Thing possessed; as, *'Esta ley es de Diós* or *divina*, This is God's Law, or divine Law.

This Use of the Positive is so necessary, when the Possession belongs to any of the Pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *se*, that we must always say, *'Esta Cása es mía*, *tuya*, *suya*, This House is mine, yours, his; not *de mi*, *ti*, or *si*. But they may be used when they do not denote Possession; as, *acuérdate de mi*, remember me; *duélete de ti*, have Compassion on your self; *dijo buena cuénta de si*, he gave a good Account of himself.

The Preposition *de* is also applied to the Place from whence we come; as, *Vengo de Palácio*, I come from Court.

When the Preposition denotes Acquisition, or the Person for whom a Thing is, we use the Prepositions *a*, or *pára*; as, *dále a Juán ésta cárta*, give John this Letter; *'Esta cárta es pára Juán*, this Letter is for John. Except here the Terminations, *me*, *te*, *se*, of the Pronouns *yo*, *tu*, *el*, which though they

denote Acquisition, do not admit of these Prepositions ; as, *dióme el dinero*, he gave me the Money.

They are also applied to the Place we are going to, whether proper or appellative ; as, *Voi a Madrid*, *de dónde partire pára Róma*, I am going to Madrid, from whence I will set out for Rome.

A is also applied to the Noun Passive ; as, *Pédro áma a Juán*, Peter loves John ; but when the Noun is an Appellative, it is sometimes used, and sometimes omitted ; as, *El maestro enseña los Discípulos*, or *a los Discípulos*, the Master teaches the Scholars.

The Preposition *Con*, before *mi*, *ti*, *si*, requires, that the Syllable *go* should be added to them ; as, *ven conmigo*, come with me ; *iré contigo*, I will go with you, *Pédro es áspero consigo*, Peter is harsh to himself. When *Con* is before an Infinitive, then the Verb is turned into a Gerund in English ; as, *con amár*, with loving.

Prepositions in Composition are frequent in Spanish, that is, joined to other Words and made one with them. These are commonly *a*, and *en*, *em*, &c. as, *Dinéro*, is Money, thence *bómbre adinerado*, a money'd Man ; and we see the like in the English, where adding *ed* to Money makes the same as the Spanish *a* : But this does not hold in most other Words : from *Noche*, Night, *anochecer*, to grow Night, which the English does not express without such Circumlocutions. *Vide*, the second Part, and the Remarks.



C H A P. VI.

Of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Interjections.

VER Y little need be said of these three Parts of Speech more than has been observed before.

As for those Adverbs, that are formed by adding *ménte* to Adjectives, as is done in *English*, by the Addition of the Syllable *ly*; when two of this Sort follow one another, the two additional Syllables, *ménte*, of the first of them, are always cut off; thus, *Caminár segúra, y alegreménte*, To travel safely, and merrily.

A Negative Adverb joined to any other Negative Part of Speech, does not make an Affirmative, as in *Latin*, and other Languages; for, *No veo a nádie*, is, I see No-body; *No te bállea ningúno*, No-body can find you; nor can the same Words be taken negatively without both the Negatives; for, it can not properly be said in *Spanish*, *Veo a nádie*, for, I see No-body; but if we would avoid the two Negatives, we must say, *No veo a persona algúna*, I see not any Person; *Nádie te balla*, No-body can find you.

Thus, *No quíero náda*, is, I will have Nothing; but, *un no náda*, is next to Nothing; as, *Fáltale un no náda del péso*, It wants as much as Nothing of the Weight. Notwithstanding which, the learned in *Spain* are of a contrary Opinion; and do rightly say, that in the *Spanish*, as well as in *Latin*, two Negative Parts of Speech make an Affirmative; as, *No náda, algo*, something, &c.

No, is also sometimes used by way of Interrogation; as, *No vendréis por acá?* Will not you come this Way?

The Conjunction *Tambien*, also, and *Tampoco*, neither, are used thus; *El va, y yo iré tambien*, He goes, and I will go also; *El no quiere, ni yo tampoco*, He will not, nor I neither.

Of Interjections, there is no more to add to what has been said already.

Of Figurative Construction.

TH E R E are two Sorts of Construction, the Proper, or Simple; and the Improper, or Figurative. The first of them is that which in all Points is agreeable to the Rules of Grammar, which has been sufficiently spoken of before. The Figurative is a Way of speaking that departs in some respect from the established Rules, and yet is admitted and received, because in common Use, not only among the Illiterate, but also among the Learned.

What little there is of this Sort in the *Spanisb* Tongue most necessary to be known, shall be comprehended in a few Lines.

The Paragoge, a Figure which adds some Letter, or Syllable at the End of a Word, is now quite out of Use in *Spanisb*, but may be found in some old Poems, especially common Songs and Ballads, where they sometimes, to make up a Verse, say, *Amóre* for *Amór*, Love; *Cantáre*, for *Cantár*, a Song, or to sing: But these superfluous Additions are now, as has been faid, quite laid aside, and only found in the Verb, *Sói*, and *Vói*, from the Verbs *Ser*, to be, and *Ir*, to go; and therefore according to the general Rule of *Spanisb* Verbs, ought to be *So*, and *Vo*, as they were used in former Ages, but of latter Times the *i* has been added for the better Sound.

The Syncope is the cutting off some Letter, in the Middle of a Word ; as, *yo vía*, I saw, *tu vías*, you saw ; for *veía*, *veías*. The same is frequently used in the second Person Plural of the Preter-imperfect Tense of the Optative, and Subjunctive Moods, of Verbs ; as *Anduviéffeis*, for *Anduviéffedeis* ; *Andariáis*, for *Andariadeis* ; *Anduvíeráis*, for *Anduvíeradeis*, &c.

The Apocope, is cutting off a Letter at the End of a Word ; as, *Mas val prevenir*, *que ser prevenido*, It is better to prevent, than to be prevented ; where we have *mas val*, for *mas vale*. The same may be seen in other Words, but now little used.

Metathesis, is Inverting the natural Order of the Letters in a Word ; as, some are apt to say, *bacéldo*, do it ; *decíldo*, say it ; *quitálculo*, take it away ; instead of *bacédo*, *decídlo*, *quitáculo*, which are the properest and most polite Way of speaking, and therefore the other Way not to be imitated.

There is another Figurative Construction, called Eclipsis, when several Words are left out of a Sentence, and to be understood ; as, *Buénos días*, Good-morrow, where is to be understood, *os dé Díos*, God give you ; *buén Viage*, a good Voyage ; *sub-intelligitur*, *os dé Diós*, God give you ; and so in many other Cases, which are common in all Languages, and therefore do not need to have much said of them.

The same may be said of many other Figures, which if all were to be mentioned, would rather tire, than inform the Reader ; and it would be likewise superfluous to mention here, and to burden the Memory with the Rules of the Prosody, which are the same as those of the Latin, and no ways necessary to learn the Spanish Language, besides what has been said in the Orthography.

Some General Observations for forming the *Spanish* from the *Latin*.

*Latin Substantives which have their Ablative in
tate become Spanish by changing tate into dd,
laying the Accent as in the Latin, as,*

<i>Latin</i>	{ Charitate Fidelitate Obscuritate Voluntate Infinitate Magnanimitate	<i>Spaniſh</i>	{ Caridád Fidelidád Obsuridád Voluntad Infinidád Magnanimidád
--------------	--	----------------	--

Many Latin Words beginning with pl change it into ll in Spanish ; as,

<i>Latin</i>	<i>Plenus</i>	<i>Lleno</i>
	<i>Pluvia</i>	<i>Lluvia</i>
	<i>Plaga</i>	<i>Llága</i>
	<i>Plorare</i>	<i>Llorar</i>
	<i>Planctus</i>	<i>Llanto</i>

But this is nothing of a general Rule, for very many Latin Words beginning with *pl* retain the same in Spanish; as, *Planta*, a Plant; *Placer*, Delight; *Plébe*, the Multitude; *Pluma*, a Feather, &c.

Latin

Latin Words beginning with f, in Spanish often change it into H, thus

<i>Latin</i>	{ Facere Faba Falco Farina Formosus Ferrum Fervor Furnus	<i>Spanish</i>	{ Hacér Hába Halcón Harína Hermoso Hiérro Hervór Hórno
--------------	---	----------------	---

Latin Substantives ending in one in the Ablative, become Spanish by taking off the last Vowel, as

<i>Latin</i>	{ Educatione Religione Congregatione Generatione	<i>Spanish</i>	{ Educación Religión Congregación Generación
--------------	---	----------------	---

Where note, that they change t into c, as above.

<i>Latin</i>	{ Sermone Cicerone Platone	<i>Spanish</i>	{ Sermón Cicerón Platon
--------------	----------------------------------	----------------	-------------------------------

Latin Substantives ending in o in the Ablative, are true Spanish, as

<i>Latin</i>	{ Ornamento Experimento Exemplo Argumento Antidoto	<i>Spanish</i>	{ Ornaménto Experiménto Exémplo Arguménto Antídoto
--------------	--	----------------	--

Latin Adjectives ending in lis, in Spanish cast away is, thus

<i>Latin</i>	Materialis Finalis Facilis Debilis	<i>Spanish</i>	Materiál Finál Fácil Débil
--------------	---	----------------	-------------------------------------

Latin Adjectives ending in us, are made Spanish by their Ablative in o, as

<i>Latin</i>	Malus Bonus Siccus Humidus	<i>Spanish</i>	Málo Buéno Séco Húmido
--------------	-------------------------------------	----------------	---------------------------------

Latin Verbs become Spanish by only cutting off the last e, thus

<i>Latin</i>	Caſtigare Amarē Tenere Perdere Sentire	<i>Spanish</i>	Caſtigár Amár Tenér Perdér Sentír
--------------	--	----------------	---

It would be endleſs to pretend to shew all the Affinity between the *Spaniſh* and the *Latin*, the main Body of the former being derived from the latter, with only such small Difference as may easily be conceived from what has been ſaid above.





A

VOCABULARY,

CONTAINING

Such Words as most frequently occur in common Use, and are therefore most necessary to be first known by Learners; as, The Parts of the Body, Household-Furniture; Names of Beasts, Birds, and Fishes; the Service at Table; Fruit, Trees, Cloathing, and many other Sorts, all under their respective Heads.



The Parts of Human Body.

Pártes del Cuérpo Humáno.

L A cabéza, <i>the bead.</i>	Las siénes, <i>the temples.</i>
El celébro, <i>the brain.</i>	La oréja, <i>the ear.</i>
El cogóte, <i>the part bebind, where the bead and neck join.</i>	La ternilla de la oréja, <i>the gristle of the ear.</i>
La coronilla, <i>the crown of the bead.</i>	El huéco de la oréja, <i>the bollow of the ear.</i>
La molléra, <i>the mould of the bead.</i>	La tela del oído, <i>the drum of the ear.</i>
La frénte, <i>the forebead.</i>	La céja, <i>the eyebrow.</i>
	El párpado, <i>the eyelid.</i>

Las

The Parts of Human Body.

Partes del Cuerpo Humano.

<i>Las pestanas, the eye-lashes.</i>	<i>La nuca, the nape of the neck.</i>
<i>El lagrimal, or la cuenca</i>	<i>La garganta, the throat.</i>
<i>del ojo, the corner of the eye.</i>	<i>El gaznate, the gullet.</i>
<i>El blanco del ojo, the white of the eye.</i>	<i>El seno, the bosom.</i>
<i>La nina del ojo, the eye-ball, or sight of the eye.</i>	<i>La teta, a pap.</i>
<i>Tela del ojo, the film of the eye.</i>	<i>El pezon de la teta, the nipple of the breast.</i>
<i>Nervio optico, the optic nerve.</i>	<i>El estomago, the stomach.</i>
<i>La nariz, the nose.</i>	<i>Las costillas, the ribs.</i>
<i>Las ventanas de la nariz, the nostrils.</i>	<i>La barriga, the belly.</i>
<i>La ternilla de la nariz, the gristle of the nose.</i>	<i>El ombligo, the navel.</i>
<i>La punta de la nariz, the tip of the nose.</i>	<i>La ingle, the groyn.</i>
<i>La mexilla, or el carrillo, the cheek.</i>	<i>El brazo, the arm.</i>
<i>La boca, the mouth.</i>	<i>El codo, the elbow.</i>
<i>La enzia, the gum.</i>	<i>El sobaco, the armpit.</i>
<i>Los dientes, the fore teeth.</i>	<i>La mano, the hand.</i>
<i>Las muelas, the grinders.</i>	<i>La muñeca, the wrist.</i>
<i>Los colmillos, the eye teeth.</i>	<i>La palma de la mano, the palm of the hand.</i>
<i>La lengua, the tongue.</i>	<i>Los dedos, the fingers.</i>
<i>El paladar, the palate.</i>	<i>Las junturas, or juntas de los dedos, the joints of the fingers.</i>
<i>La quixada, the jaw.</i>	<i>La yema del dedo, the brawn of the finger.</i>
<i>La barba, the chin, or the beard; but in the latter sense commonly used in the plural, Bárbaras.</i>	<i>El pulgar, the thumb.</i>
<i>El cuelло, the neck.</i>	<i>El dedo indice, the forefinger.</i>
<i>La cerviz, the binder part of the neck.</i>	<i>El dedo del corazon, the middle finger.</i>
	<i>El dedo annular, the fourth finger.</i>
	<i>El dedo menique, or auriculär, the little finger.</i>
	<i>La</i>

The Parts of Human Body.

Pártes del Cuérpo Humáno.

La uña, <i>the nail.</i>	El pié, <i>the foot.</i>
Las espaldas, <i>the back.</i>	La plánta del pié, <i>the sole of the foot.</i>
Los hómbros, <i>the shoulders.</i>	
Los lómos, <i>the loins.</i>	La garganta del pié, <i>the joint of the foot.</i>
Los lados, <i>the sides.</i>	
Las nálgas, <i>the buttocks.</i>	El empéine, <i>the instep.</i>
Las pártes vergonzosas, <i>the privities.</i>	El calcañal, <i>the heel.</i>
El músclo, <i>the thighb.</i>	El dédo del pié, <i>a toe.</i>
La rodilla, <i>the knee.</i>	El dédo gordo, <i>the great toe.</i>
El jarréte, <i>the ham.</i>	La piel, or el pellejo, <i>the skin.</i>
La pierna, <i>the leg.</i>	
La pantorrilla, <i>the calf of the leg.</i>	El cabelllo, <i>the hair.</i>
	Un pelo, <i>a single hair.</i>
La espinilla, <i>the spine-bone.</i>	La cara, <i>the face.</i>
El tovillo, <i>the ankle.</i>	El visage, <i>the visage.</i>

The interior Parts of Human Body.

Pártes interiores del Cuérpo Humáno.

M Orecillo, <i>a muscle.</i>	La espaldilla, <i>the shoulder-bone.</i>
Gráffa, or gordura, <i>fat.</i>	La canilla del brazo, <i>the arm bone.</i>
Membrána, <i>a membrane.</i>	Hueso sacro, } <i>the rump or Rabadilla, } bone.</i>
Nérvio, or niérvo, <i>a nerve.</i>	Eskeléto, <i>a skeleton.</i>
Véna, <i>a vein.</i>	El corazón, <i>the heart.</i>
Artéria, <i>an artery.</i>	Los bófes, or } <i>the lungs.</i>
Ternilla, <i>a gristle.</i>	Los pulmones, or } <i>or the</i>
Hueso, <i>a bone.</i>	Los livianos, } <i>lights.</i>
Meóllo, or } <i>marrow.</i>	El hígado, <i>the liver.</i>
Tuétano, } <i>skull.</i>	El bázo, <i>the spleen.</i>
La calavéra, <i>the skull.</i>	Los riñones, <i>the kidneys.</i>
Choquezuélas, <i>the chine bones.</i>	Los sélos, <i>the brains.</i>
El espinázo, <i>the back bone.</i>	El celébro, <i>the brains.</i>
Las costillas, <i>the ribs.</i>	

The interior Parts of Human Body.

Pártes interiores del Cuérpo Humano.

El estómago, <i>the stomach.</i>	La fléma, <i>flegm.</i>
La boca del estómago, <i>the pit of the stomach.</i>	El quíle, <i>the chile.</i>
Las tripas, <i>the guts.</i>	La leche, <i>the milk.</i>
Los intestinos, <i>the bowels.</i>	Orína, or urína, <i>urine.</i>
La madre, or <i>the matrix,</i>	Estiércol, <i>dung.</i>
La matríz, <i>or womb.</i>	Sudór, <i>sweat.</i>
La vexiga, <i>the bladder.</i>	Móco, <i>snot.</i>
La sangre, <i>the blood.</i>	Cáspa, <i>scurf.</i>
La cólera, <i>the choler.</i>	Saliva, <i>spittle.</i>
	Lágrima, <i>a tear.</i>

The five Senses,

Los cinco Sentidos.

La vista, <i>the sight.</i>	El gusto, <i>the taste.</i>
El oído, <i>the bearing.</i>	El tacto, <i>the feeling.</i>
El olfato, <i>the smell.</i>	

Good Qualities in Human Bodies,
Buénas Calidádes del Cuérpo Humano.

Salud, <i>health.</i>	Brío, <i>spiritfulness.</i>
Hermosura, <i>beauty.</i>	Buén talle, <i>a good shape.</i>

Defects in Human Bodies,
Deféctos del Cuérpo Humano.

Fealdad, <i>deformity.</i>	Flaqueza, <i>weakness.</i>
Arrugas, <i>wrinkles.</i>	Ser tuerto, <i>to have but one eye.</i>
Pécas, <i>freckles.</i>	Coxéz, <i>lameness.</i>
Lagáñas, <i>blear-eyes.</i>	Ser tartamudo, <i>to stammer.</i>
Verruga, <i>a wart.</i>	Corcóva, <i>crookedness.</i>
Lunár, <i>a mole.</i>	Ser cálvo, <i>to be bald-headed.</i>
Núbe en el ojo, <i>a pearl in the eye.</i>	Ser rómo, <i>to have a flat-nose.</i>
Cataráta, <i>a cataract.</i>	Estár estropeado, <i>to be crippled.</i>
Ceguedad, or ceguera, <i>blindness.</i>	Tullido, <i>lame of the limbs.</i>
Magrúra, <i>leanness.</i>	Eunúcho, <i>an eunuch.</i>
	Zúrdo,

Defects in Human Bodies,
Deféctos del Cuérpo Humáno.

Zúrdo, <i>left-banded.</i>	Mánco, <i>lame of a band.</i>
Vísco, or visójo, <i>squint-eyed.</i>	Múdo, <i>dumb.</i>

Of all that appertains to Cloathing,
De lo que tóca al vestir.

Páño, <i>cloth.</i>	Fiéltro, <i>felt.</i>
Páño fino, <i>fine cloth.</i>	Angéo, <i>canvas.</i>
Páño básto, <i>coarse cloth.</i>	Bayéta, <i>bays.</i>
Páño tundido, <i>mill'd cloth.</i>	Lána, <i>wooll.</i>
Grána, or } Scarlet.	Estdámbre, <i>worsted.</i>
Escarláta, }	Séda, <i>silk.</i>
Ráxa, <i>cloth rassb.</i>	Bocaci, <i>buckram.</i>
Sayál, <i>sackcloth.</i>	Jóya, <i>a jewel.</i>
Frísa, <i>frize.</i>	Hevilla, <i>a buckle.</i>
Estaméña, <i>serge.</i>	Alamáres, <i>loops on coats.</i>
Estófa, <i>stuff.</i>	Ojál, <i>a button-hole.</i>
Tafetán, <i>taffety.</i>	Bordadúra, <i>embroidery.</i>
Ráso, <i>satin.</i>	Botón, <i>a button.</i>
Terciopélo, <i>velvet.</i>	Fránja, or } fringe.
Damásco, <i>damask.</i>	Fluéque, }
Brocadó, <i>brocade.</i>	Púntas, or encáxe, <i>lace.</i>
Gorgorán, <i>grogram.</i>	Cinta, <i>a ribbon.</i>
Chamelóte, <i>taby.</i>	Listón, <i>a broad ribbon.</i>
Téla de óro, <i>cloth of gold.</i>	Passamáno, <i>gold or silver lace.</i>
Algodón, <i>cotton.</i>	Ribete, <i>an edging.</i>
Fustán, <i>fustian.</i>	Sombréro, <i>a hat.</i>
Líno, <i>flax.</i>	Cópa del sombréro, <i>the crown of the hat.</i>
Cambráy, <i>cambrick.</i>	Fálda del sombréro, <i>the brim of the hat.</i>
Holánda, <i>holland.</i>	Tréncillo, <i>the hat-band.</i>
Ruán, <i>fine French linnen.</i>	Plumáge, <i>a feather.</i>
Téla de cáñamo, <i>bempen cloth.</i>	Bonetillo de viéjo, <i>a skull-cap.</i>
Terliz, <i>ticken.</i>	Bonete,
Calicú, <i>calico.</i>	
Gáza, <i>muzlin.</i>	

*Of all that appertains to Cloathing.**De lo que toca al vestir.*

Bonéte, <i>a cap.</i>	Bótas, <i>boots.</i>
Bonéte pára dormír, <i>a night-cap.</i>	Poláinas, <i>spatterdaſhes.</i> Espuélas, <i>spurs.</i>
Bonéte de clérigo, <i>a clergy-man's square cap.</i>	Púños, or } <i>cuffs or ruffles.</i> Buéltas, }
Górra, <i>an old faſhion cap.</i>	Tahalí, <i>a ſhoulder-belt.</i>
Caperúza, <i>another ſort of cap.</i>	Tíros, <i>a waste-belt.</i>
Camíſa, <i>a ſhirt.</i>	Eſpáda, <i>a ſword.</i>
Almilla, <i>a waste-coat.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Chúpa, <i>a waste-coat.</i>	Cápa, <i>a cloak.</i>
Calzoncillos, <i>drawers.</i>	Cafáca, <i>a coat.</i>
Jubón, <i>a doublet.</i>	Ungarína, <i>a coat.</i>
Mángua, <i>a ſleeve.</i>	Guánte, <i>a glove.</i>
Mángua perdida, <i>a loose hanging ſleeve.</i>	Ceñidór, <i>a girdle.</i>
Faldillas de jubón, <i>the skirts of a doublet.</i>	Cabelléra, <i>a wig.</i>
Calzónes, <i>breeches.</i>	Pañuelo, or } <i>a pocket</i>
Balóna, <i>a band.</i>	Pañizuélo, or } <i>band-</i>
Cuéllo, <i>a collar.</i>	Liénzo de fal- } <i>ker-</i>
Coléto, <i>a buff coat.</i>	triquéra, } <i>chief.</i>
Agujéta, <i>a point.</i>	Rópa, or } <i>a gown.</i>
Faltriquéra, <i>a pocket.</i>	Ropón, }
Bolsillo, <i>a coat or waste-coat-pocket.</i>	Rópa de levantár, <i>a morning gown.</i>
Médias, <i>ſtockins.</i>	Pelico, or } <i>a ſhepherd's jerkin.</i>
Médias de feda, <i>silk-stockings.</i>	Zamárra, }
Médias de eſtámber, <i>worſed ſtockings.</i>	Pára Mugéres,
Ligas, <i>garters.</i>	For Women.
Zapátos, <i>ſhoes.</i>	Tocado, <i>a bead-dress.</i>
Escarpines, <i>ſocks.</i>	Tóca, <i>a quoif.</i>
Pantúſlo, <i>a ſlipper.</i>	Mánto, <i>a veil.</i>
Borcegui, <i>a buſkin.</i>	Sáya, <i>a petticoat.</i>
	Vasquiña, <i>an upper petticoat.</i>
	Guardapies, <i>a petticoat.</i>
	Enáguas, <i>the petticoat next to them.</i>
	Avantál,

Of all that appertains to Cloathing for Women.

De lo que tóca al vestir para Mugéres.

Avantál, or delantál, an apron.	Avaníco, a fan.
Ballénas, stays.	Guarda-sól, or } an umbrella.
Rópa, a gown.	Quita-sól,
Mantilla, a mantle.	Relóx, or } a watch.
Capillo, a hood.	Muéstra,
Chápin, properly a Spanish big clog, made of cork, but applied to signify any other.	Tablillas, tables.
Liénzo del cuélllo, a neck-bandkerchief.	Espéjo, a looking-glass.
Zarcillos, ear-rings.	Buxéta, a little box.
Arracádas, pendants.	Estufilla, a muff.
Gargantilla, a necklace.	Calcetas, under stockings of bread or cotton.
Collár, a collar.	Péinadór, a combing cloth.
Manillas, or } bracelets.	Cosas de níños, things for children.
Braceletes,	Pañáles, clouts.
Jóyas, jewels.	Mantillas, mantles.
Sortijas, rings.	Fáxa, a rowler or swaith.
Pedrerías, precious stones.	Juguétes, play-things.
Anillo, a ring.	Cúna, a cradle.
	Ama, a nurse.
	Díxes, toys.

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al Comér y Bebér.

L	A comida del medio dia, dinner.	Hastío, a loatbing of meat for want of stomach.
	Céna, supper.	'Alscó, a loatbing at the sight of nastiness.
	Almuérzo, breakfast.	Borrácho, a drunkard.
	Merienda, bever, or after-noon's luncheon.	Buén bebedor, a good drinker.
	Colación, collation.	Buen apetito, a good appetite.
	Banquête, an entertainment.	Glotón, a glutton.
	Combidádo, a guest.	Pan, bread.
	Hambre, bunger.	
	Sed, thirst.	

Pan.

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al Comér y Beber.

Pan blánco, <i>white bread.</i>	Pepitória, <i>giblets.</i>
Pan candiál, <i>the whitest bread.</i>	Carbonáda, <i>meat broil'd on the coals.</i>
Pan bázο, <i>brown bread.</i>	Picadillo, <i>a hash.</i>
Pan molléte, <i>French bread.</i>	Cecína, <i>hung meat.</i>
Pan reciente, <i>new bread.</i>	Pernil, or } <i>a gammon or ham.</i>
Pan de todo el trigo, <i>wheaten bread.</i>	Jamón, } <i>ham.</i>
	Carnero, <i>mutton.</i>
Pan de centeno, <i>rye bread.</i>	Vaca, <i>beef.</i>
Pan de cevada, <i>barley bread.</i>	Cordero, <i>lamb.</i>
Pan de avéna, <i>oaten bread.</i>	Ternera, <i>veal.</i>
Pan de mijo, <i>millet bread.</i>	Puerco, <i>pork.</i>
Pan de levadura, <i>leavened bread.</i>	Cabra, <i>goat's flesh.</i>
	Cabrito, <i>kid.</i>
Biscocho, <i>bisket.</i>	Tocino, <i>bacon.</i>
Rebanada de pan, <i>a slice of bread.</i>	Pierna de carnero, <i>a leg of mutton.</i>
Cantero de pan, <i>a crust of bread.</i>	Espalda de carnero, <i>a shoulder of mutton.</i>
La cortéza, <i>the crust.</i>	Lomo, <i>a loin.</i>
Máffa, <i>dough.</i>	Pecho, <i>a breast.</i>
Tórta, <i>a cake.</i>	Máños de carnero, <i>sheep's trotters.</i>
Rosquilla, <i>a fine sort of cake, made like a roll.</i>	Rueda de ternera, <i>a fillet of veal.</i>
Buñuelo, <i>a fritter.</i>	Affadúra, <i>the pluck.</i>
Tárta, <i>a tart.</i>	Salchicha, <i>a saucide.</i>
Quesadilla, <i>a cheesecake.</i>	Longaniza, <i>a great saucide.</i>
Empanada, <i>a pye.</i>	Cárne cozida, <i>boil'd meat.</i>
	Salchichón, <i>the biggest saucide.</i>
Cárne asfada, <i>roast meat.</i>	Cárne estofada, <i>stew'd meat.</i>
	Morcilla, <i>a blood pudding.</i>
Cárne frita, <i>fry'd meat.</i>	Cárne grillada, <i>broil'd meat.</i>
	Pastel, <i>a pasty.</i>
Cárne momia, <i>flesh without bones.</i>	Caldo, <i>broth.</i>
	Sopa, <i>soup.</i>
	Potage, <i>potage.</i>
	Pápas,

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al Comér y Beber.

Pápas, or } any sort of	Huévos y torrésnos, col-
Púches, } pap.	lops and eggs.
Písto, jelly broth.	Huévos rebuéltos, butter'd
Léche, milk.	eggs.
Náta, cream.	Huévos de saltriquéra,
Suero, whey.	yolks of eggs in a shell of
Requesón, curds.	sugar, to carry in the
Manteca, butter.	pocket.
Queso, cheese.	Huévos reáles, sweet eggs
Cuajo, rennet.	or Cabéllos, spun out
Cuajada, milk bardned with rennet, before it breaks into curds and whey.	de ángeles, like hairs.
Huévo, an egg.	Sazón, seasoning.
Yéma de huévo, the yolk of an egg.	Salmuéra, brine.
Clara del huévo, the white of the egg.	Espécias, spice.
Huévo blando, a soft egg.	Pimiénta, pepper.
Huévo duro, a hard egg.	Gengibre, ginger.
Huévo frasco, a new egg.	Clavo de especias, cloves.
Huévo en cáscara, an egg in the shell.	Canela, cinnamon.
Huévo cozido, a boil'd egg.	Nuéz muscada, or de especia, nutmeg.
Huévo asado, an egg roast- ed in the embers.	Flor de especia, mace.
Huévo estrellado, a fry'd egg.	Mostaza, mustard.
Huévo huero, an addle egg.	Agráz, verjuice.
Huévo empollado, an egg with a chicken in it.	Vinagre, vinegar.
Huévos de pescado, the spawn of fish.	Azéite, oyl.
Huévos mexidos, yolks of eggs stew'd with white wine and sugar.	Sal, salt.
	Azúcar, sugar.
	Escabéches, pickles.
	Dulces, sweetmeats.
	Almívar, sugar boil'd up for conserves.
	Conservas, conserves.
	Confites, confits.
	Mermelada, marmelade.
	Peráda, pears preserv'd like marmelade.
	Pastillas

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocante al comér y Beber.

Pastillas de bóca, <i>sweet lozenges.</i>	Víno añéjo, <i>old wine.</i> Móstico, <i>new wine.</i>
Naranjada, <i>candy'd oranges.</i>	Víno ligero, <i>light wine.</i>
Turrón, <i>a rich sweetmeat made of almonds, honey, &c.</i>	Vinázo, <i>a strong wine.</i> Víno moscatél, <i>muskadine wine.</i>
Barquillos, or Suplicaciones, <i>sweet wafers.</i>	Malvasía, <i>malmsey.</i> 'Agua pié, <i>liquor made of water put to the grapes after they have been press'd.</i>
Bebida, <i>drink.</i>	Hez del víno, <i>wine lees.</i>
Víno, <i>wine.</i>	Hipocrás, <i>bypocras.</i>
Víno puro, <i>pure wine.</i>	Aguardiente, <i>brandy.</i>
Víno aguado, <i>wine and water.</i>	Cervéza, <i>ale or beer.</i>
Víno vuélto, <i>prick'd wine.</i>	Alója, <i>meath or metheglin.</i>
Víno tinto, <i>red wine.</i>	Cídra, <i>cyder.</i>
Víno blanco, <i>white wine.</i>	Chocoláte, <i>chocolate.</i>
Víno halóque, <i>pale wine.</i>	Teá, or Thé tea.
Víno claréte, <i>claret wine.</i>	Limonáda, <i>limonade.</i>
Víno dulce, <i>sweet wine.</i>	
Víno picante, <i>sharp wine.</i>	

Los Animales, 'Aves, Péces, Frutas, Híeras, Raíces, &c. comestibles, se hallarán debaxo de sus propios Títulos.

The Beasts, Fowls, Fishes, Fruits, Herbs, Roots, &c. that are eatable, will be found under those Heads.

Béstias.	Beasts.
Béstia, <i>a beast.</i>	Váca, <i>a cow.</i>
Béstia domestica, <i>or Mánfa, a tame beast.</i>	Buéy, <i>an ox.</i> Carnéro, <i>a sheep.</i>
Béstia feroz, <i>a fierce beast.</i>	Ovéja, <i>an ewe.</i> Cordéro, <i>a lamb.</i>
Ganado, <i>cattle.</i>	Bezérro, <i>a calf.</i>
Ganado mayor, <i>great cattle.</i>	Javalí, <i>a wild boar.</i>
Tóro, <i>a bull.</i>	Puérco,

Puércos, <i>an hog.</i>	Alazán tostado, <i>a dark sorrel.</i>
Búfalo, <i>a buffalo.</i>	Hovéro, <i>that has a white spot on the off hind foot.</i>
Cabállo, <i>an horse.</i>	Rubicán, <i>flea-bitten.</i>
Cabállo castrado, <i>a gelding.</i>	Cabállo aguado, <i>py-bald.</i>
Garañón, <i>a stallion.</i>	Yégua, <i>a mare.</i>
Cabállo entero, <i>a stony horse.</i>	Cabrón, <i>a be-goat.</i>
Cabállo corredór, <i>a race-horse.</i>	Cábra, <i>a she-goat.</i>
Cabállo de alquilér, <i>a horse to be let.</i>	Cabrító, <i>a kid.</i>
Cabállo de máno, <i>a led horse.</i>	Pérro, <i>a dog.</i>
Cabállo de pósta, <i>a post-horse.</i>	Pérro de caza, <i>a bound.</i>
Cabállo rebélde, <i>a restive horse.</i>	Sabuésso, <i>a blood-bound.</i>
Cabállo desbocado, <i>a hard mouth'd horse.</i>	Podénco, or } <i>a setting dog.</i>
Cabállo medróso, <i>a start-ing horse.</i>	Perdiguéro } <i>a setting dog.</i>
Cabállo tropezadór, <i>a stumbling horse.</i>	Pérro callado, <i>a bound that does not open well.</i>
Cabállo que sacúde, <i>a jolt-ing horse.</i>	Párro báxo, <i>a terrier.</i>
Cabállo asmático, <i>a broken winded horse.</i>	Lebrél, <i>a grey-bound.</i>
Cabállo indómito, <i>a horse that has not been broke, or will not be broke.</i>	Pérro ventór, <i>a finder.</i>
Cabállo báyo, <i>a bay horse.</i>	Pérro del agua, <i>a water-dog.</i>
Báyo castaño, <i>a chestnut bay.</i>	Mastín, <i>a mastif.</i>
Báyo escúro, <i>a brown bay.</i>	Pérro de pastór, <i>a sheep-herd's dog.</i>
Báyo dorádo, <i>a bright bay.</i>	Pérro veladór, <i>a house dog.</i>
Picázo, <i>a py'd horse.</i>	Perrillo de falda, <i>a lap-dog.</i>
Rúzio rodádo, <i>dapple grey.</i>	Aláno, <i>a bull-dog.</i>
De colór de gamúza, or gamuéza, <i>a cream colour.</i>	Gálgo, <i>a bare bound.</i>
Alazán, <i>a sorrel.</i>	Lechón, <i>a sucking-pig.</i>
	Cochíno, <i>a young hog.</i>
	Conéjo, <i>a rabbit.</i>
	Hacanéa, <i>a pad.</i>
	Muléto, <i>a young mule.</i>
	Múlo, <i>an he mule.</i>
	Múla, <i>a she mule.</i>
	Pótro, <i>a colt.</i>
	Pollino, <i>an ass's colt.</i>
	Ciérvos, <i>a stag.</i>
	Ciérvia,

Ciérvia, a bind.	Ratón, a mouse.
Cachórro de ciérvo, a fawn.	Ráta, a rat.
'Aññas de ciérvo, a stag's horns.	Zórra, or } a fox. Raposa, }
Rástro, o pisadas de ciérvo, the track of a stag.	Tópo, a mole.
Comadréja, a weasel.	Hiéna, an hyena.
Texón, a badger.	Leopárdo, a leopard.
Gamúza, a wild goat.	León, a lion.
Cábra montés, a roe-buck.	Leóna, a lioness.
Gáto de algália, a civet-cat.	Leoncillo, a lion's whelp.
Gámo, a fallow-deer.	Lóbo, a wolf.
Dáma, a doe.	Lóbo cerval, an ounce.
Hardilla, a squirrel.	'Ospo, a bear.
Elephánte, an elephant.	Ossillo, a bear's cub.
Foína, or } a martin. Márta,	Pantéra, a panther.
Móno, a monkey.	Abáda, or } a rhino- Gímio, an ape.
Armínio, an ermin.	Rhinocerónte, } ceros.
Erízo, an hedgehog.	Tígre, a tiger.
Liébre, an hare.	Puérco montés, a wild boar.
Liebrilla, a leurret.	Navájas, or colmillos de javalí, the tusks of a wild boar.
Conéjo, a rabbit.	Lavajál de javalí, the soil of a wild boar.
Lirón, a dormouse.	

Creatures that drag on the Earth.

Animáles que se arrastran por Tierra.

Serpiente, a serpent.	Cocodrillo, a crocodile.
Serpiente aláda, a flying serpent.	Lagartija, a lizard.
Dragón, a dragon.	Lagárto, an alligator.
'Aspid, an asp.	Bívora, or víbora, a viper.
Culébra, a snake.	Bivorésno, or viborésno, a young viper.

Ampibious

Amphibious Creatures.

Animales Amphíbios.

Bívaro, or } a bever, or Tortúga, or } a tortoise.
Castór, } castor. Galápago, }
Nútria, or } an otter.
Lódra,

Savandijas.

Aráña, a spider.
Arañuela, a little spider.
Carcóma, a worm in wood.
Oruga, a caterpillar.
Aradór de la mano, an
band-worm.
Sápo, a toad.
Escarabájo, a beetle.
Caracól, a snail.
Hormiga, a pismire, or ant.
Rána, a frog.
Grillo, a cricket.
Reboltón, an insect that
spoils vines.
Piójo, a louse.
Liendre, a nit.
Púlga, a flea.

Insects.

Chínche, a bug.
Langosta, a locust.
Escorpión, a scorpion.
Tarántula, a tarantula.
Polilla, a moth.
Mósca, a fly.
Moscarda, a wasp.
Abéja, a bee.
Moscón, a great fly.
Zángano, a drone.
Cigarra, a grasshopper.
Abíspera, or avispa, a wasp.
Tahón, a gad bee, or hornet.
Lucernéja, a fire-fly.
Mariposa, a butter-fly.
Vaquílla de diós, a lady-
bird.

'Aves.

Aguila, an eagle.
Aguilúcho, an eaglet.
Búitre, a vulture.
Esmerejón, a merlin.
Gavilán, a sparrow-hawk.
Mochuélo, a tassel-hawk.
Halcón, a falcon.
Torzuélo, a male falcon.
Girifálte, a gerfalcon.
Alcotán, a lanner.
Sácre, a sacre.

Birds.

Gá尔za, an heron.
Gárzota, a small heron.
Miláno, a kite.
Cuérvo, a crow, or raven.
Cornéja, a rook.
Calándria, a lark.
Nevecilla, a wagtail.
Canário, a canary bird.
Gilguéro, a goldfinch.
Mírla, a blackbird.
Pinzón, a chafinch.
T 3 Ruiſenór,

Ruiseñor, a nightingale.	Pávo, a turkey.
Verderón, a greenbird.	Estorníno, a sterling.
Papagayo, a parrot.	Francolín, a godwit.
Urraca, a magpye.	Faisán, a pheasant.
Grájo, a daw.	Zorzál, a tbrush.
Lechúza, an owl.	Hortoláno, an ortolan.
Morciélagos, a bat.	Gorrión, a sparrow.
Mochuélo, a chough.	Perdiz, a partridge.
Cumáya, a night raven.	Palóma, a dove.
Chotacábras, a goat-sucker.	Pichón, a pigeon.
'Anade, a duck.	Palomino, a young pigeon.
Cerceta, a teal.	Tórtola, a turtle-dove.
Chirlito, a curlieu.	Alción, a king's-fisher.
Cuervo marino, a cormorant.	Golondrina, a swallow.
Gánso, a goose.	Avestrúz, an ostrich.
Páto, a goose.	Ciguéña, a stork.
'Ansar, or } the same.	Cuclillo, a cuckow.
Anséron,	Císne, a swan.
Cernícalo, a wind whiffer.	Pitiróxo, a robin-red breast.
Fúlga, a moorhen.	Grúlla, a crane.
Abión, a martin.	Pezpítalo, or } a wagtail.
Gaviota, a gull.	Chirivía,
Somorgujón, or } a diver.	Abuillo, a lapwing.
Cerceta,	Oropéndola, a wiswal.
Cuervo marino, a cormorant.	Vencéjo, a martlet.
Chócha, or } a wood-	Abajarúco, a titmouse.
Gallina ciéga } cock.	Abutárda, a bustard.
Tórdo, a stare, or starling.	Tórdo lóco, an owsel.
Codorniz, a quail.	Pelícano, a pelican.
Capón, a capon.	Feníz, or phénix, a pbenix.
Gállo, a cock.	Chírlo, a wood-pecker.
Gallina, a hen.	Picoverde, a green beak.
Pollo, a chicken;	Reyezuélo, a plover.
Polla, a pullet.	Aguzaniéve, a wren.
	Talavilla, a bunting.
	Mérgo, a puffin.

Parts of a Bird.

Pártes de 'Ave.

El píco, <i>the beak.</i>	Búche, <i>the craw.</i>
Plúma, <i>a feather.</i>	Gárras, or } <i>the claws, or</i>
Plumázo, <i>the down.</i>	Uñas, } <i>talons.</i>
Ala, <i>the wing.</i>	Rabadilla, <i>the rump.</i>
Peñolas, or } <i>quills, or pen-</i>	Pechúga, <i>the wing of a</i>
Penulas, } <i>feathers.</i>	fowl dress'd.
Pié, <i>the foot.</i>	Entrepechúga, <i>the brawn.</i>
Cóla, <i>the tail.</i>	

Pézes.

Abúrno, <i>a bleak.</i>
Sábalo, <i>a ribb fish like salmon.</i>
Anchóva, <i>an anchove.</i>
Anguila, <i>an eel.</i>
Balléna, <i>a whale.</i>
Bárbo, <i>a barble.</i>
Méro, <i>the balybut.</i>
Lúso, <i>a pike.</i>
Cárpa, <i>a carp.</i>
Calamaréjo, <i>a calamary.</i>
Talpáire, <i>the miller's thumb.</i>
Cabállo maríno, <i>a sea horse.</i>
Cóngrio, <i>a conger.</i>
Delphín, <i>a dolphin.</i>
Doradillo, <i>the gilt back.</i>
Lenguado, <i>a foal.</i>
Langosta, <i>a lobster.</i>
Esturión, <i>a surgeon.</i>
Góbio, <i>a gudgeon.</i>
Harénque, <i>a herring.</i>
Ostra, <i>an oyster.</i>

Fishes.

Lampréa, <i>a lamprey.</i>
Langostilla, <i>a prawn.</i>
Lóbo, <i>a bass.</i>
Sárda, <i>a mackarel.</i>
Marsópa, <i>a porpoise.</i>
Abadéxo, <i>poor jack.</i>
Merlúza, <i>stock-fish.</i>
Alméja, <i>a muscle.</i>
Ortiga pez, <i>the stinging-fish.</i>
Pérca, <i>a pearcb.</i>
Púlpo, <i>a polipus.</i>
Ráya, <i>a thornback.</i>
Líza, <i>skate.</i>
Sardína, <i>a pilcbard.</i>
Salmón, <i>salmon.</i>
Xíbia, <i>a cuttle-fish.</i>
Ténca, <i>a tench.</i>
Atún, <i>a tunny fish.</i>
Tremielga, <i>a cramp fish.</i>
Trúcha, <i>a trout.</i>
Rodovállo, <i>a turbot.</i>

Parts of a Fish.

Pártes del Pez.

Hocico, <i>the snout.</i>	Huévos de pez, <i>the spawn</i>
Agállas, <i>the gills.</i>	properly <i>the bard row,</i> <i>which is in small grains.</i>
'Alas con que náda, <i>the fins.</i>	
Escámas, <i>the scales.</i>	Léche del pez, <i>is the soft</i>
Espínas, <i>the bones.</i>	<i>row.</i>
Cóncha, <i>the shell of such</i> <i>as have one.</i>	

'Arboles.

Alvaricóque, <i>an apricot tree.</i>	Manzáno, <i>an apple tree.</i>
Alménadro, <i>an almond tree.</i>	'Alamo negro, <i>an alder tree, or black poplar.</i>
Durázno, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Alamo blanco, <i>the common poplar.</i>
Guíndo, <i>a cherry tree.</i>	Cédro, <i>a cedar tree.</i>
Cerézo, <i>an hart cherry tree.</i>	Sahúco, <i>an elder tree.</i>
Castáño, <i>a chesnut tree.</i>	Enzína, or } Róble, <i>an oak.</i>
Cídrio, <i>a citron tree.</i>	Cornízo, <i>the cornil tree.</i>
Membríllo, <i>a quince tree.</i>	Cyprés, <i>the cypress tree.</i>
Servál, <i>a service tree.</i>	'Ebano, <i>the ebony tree.</i>
Pálma, <i>a date tree.</i>	Arze, <i>the maple.</i>
Higuéra, <i>a fig tree.</i>	Háya, <i>the beach.</i>
Azuféifo, <i>a jujub tree.</i>	Frésno, <i>the ash.</i>
Granádo, <i>a pomgranate tree.</i>	Azébo, <i>the holm, or holy oak.</i>
Limón, <i>a lemon tree.</i>	Téxo, <i>the ewe tree.</i>
Morál, <i>a mulberry tree.</i>	Laurél, <i>the laurel.</i>
Níspelo, <i>a medlar tree.</i>	Alcornóque, <i>the corck tree.</i>
Avelláno, <i>a nut tree.</i>	Olmo, <i>the elm.</i>
Nogál, <i>a walnut tree.</i>	Píno, <i>a pine tree, or fir tree.</i>
Olivo, or Azeitúno, <i>an olive tree.</i>	Plántano, <i>a plane tree.</i>
Azebúche, <i>a wild olive tree.</i>	Sáuze, <i>a willow tree.</i>
Naránjo, <i>an orange tree.</i>	Téjo, <i>the linden tree.</i>
Alvérchigo, <i>a peach tree.</i>	
Ciruélo, <i>a plumb tree.</i>	
Perál, <i>a pear tree.</i>	

Trees.

Arbolillos,

Arbolillos, or Mátas.

Agnocásto, *the agnus castus.*
Alíso, *the lote tree.*
Bálsamo, *the balsam tree.*
Bóx, *the box tree.*
Madresélva, *the honeysuckle-tree.*
Zarzamóro, *the blackberry-bush.*
Hiniésta, *broom.*
Uva espino, *a gooseberry-bush.*
Adé尔pha, *ivy.*

Shrubs.

Brúscio, *butcher's broom.*
Alhócigo, *the pistacho tree.*
Regaliz, or regalicia, *the liquorice tree.*
Roméro, *rosemary.*
Rosál, *a rose tree.*
Savína, *savin.*
Tamariz, *a tamarind tree.*
Aléña, *privet.*
Viña, *a vine.*
Labrusca, *a wild vine.*
Párra, *a wall vine.*

Fruta,

Albaricóque, *an apricot.*
Alméndra, *an almond.*
Madróño, *a fruit like a straw-berry.*
Durázno, *a peach.*
Guínda, *a cherry.*
Ceréza, *an heart-cherry.*
Caftáña, *a chestnut.*
Cídra, *a citron.*
Membrillo, *a quince.*
Sérva, *service.*
Dátil, *a date.*
Hígo, *a fig.*
Bréva, *the first fig.*
Azufáifa, *a jujub.*
Granáda, *a pomegranate.*
Limón, *a lemon.*
Móra, *a mulberry.*
Níspero, *a medlar.*
Avellána, *a hazel nut.*
Nuéz, *a walnut.*
Azeitúna, *an olive.*

Fruit.

Naránja, *an orange.*
Alvérchigo, *a peach.*
Ciruélala, *a plumb.*
Ciruélala passa, *a prune.*
Péra, *a pear.*
Péra bergamóta, *a bergamot-pear.*
Manzána, *an apple.*
Camuésa, *a pippin.*
Manzána de S. Juan, *a John-apple.*
Uva espín, *a gooseberry.*
Melocotón, *a melocotoon.*
Melón, *a melon.*
Bellóta, *an acorn.*
Algarróba, *a carob.*
Alcapárra, *a caper.*
Zárza móra, *a blackberry.*
Tamariz, *a tamarind.*
Piñón, *the kernel of a pine-apple.*
Uva, *a grape.*

Things belonging to Fruit and Trees,
Cosas tocantes a Frutas y 'Arboles.

Cáscara de granáda, nuéz, Raíz,	<i>a root.</i>
&c. the shell of a pomegranate, nut, or the like.	Hébras de raíz, <i>the fibres of a root.</i>
Telita de granáda, o ótra semejante fruta, the thin film in the pomegranate, or such fruit.	Arraigár, <i>to take root.</i>
Trónco, the trunk of a tree.	Trónco, <i>the trunk of a tree.</i>
Cortéza del árbol, the bark.	Cortéza del árbol, <i>the bark.</i>
Zúmo del árbol, the sap.	Zúmo del árbol, <i>the sap.</i>
Móho, the moss.	Móho, <i>the moss.</i>
Rámo, a branch.	Rámo, <i>a branch.</i>
Hója, a leaf.	Hója, <i>a leaf.</i>
Cuésco de fruta, the stone of fruit.	Cuésco de fruta, <i>the stone of fruit.</i>
Zarcillos de la vid, the tendrels of a vine.	Mondadúras de fruta, the paring of fruit.
Pámpano, a vine branch.	Pezón, <i>the stalk.</i>
Renuévo de vid, a young shoot of a vine.	Engerir, or ingerir, <i>to engrift.</i>
Racimo de úvas, a bunch of grapes.	Almáciga, <i>a nursery of trees.</i>
Pepita de la úva, a grape-stone.	Arboléda, <i>a grove.</i>
Plantár, <i>to plant.</i>	Arbol filvéstre, <i>a wild tree.</i>
Escavár, <i>to lay open the roots.</i>	Marhojár, <i>to bark trees.</i>
Rodrigár, <i>to prop a vine.</i>	Engerir de púa, <i>to engrift.</i>
Desojár, <i>to nip the superfluous leaves of the vine.</i>	Engerir de cañuto, <i>to inoculate.</i>
Cavár, <i>to dig about a vine.</i>	Engérto, <i>a graft.</i>
Rozár, <i>to weed.</i>	Pepita, <i>the seed or small kernel of fruit.</i>

Corn, and its Parts,
Trígos, y sus Pártes.

Trigo, wheat.	Trigo rubión, <i>red wheat.</i>
Trigo candial, the best wheat.	Escándia, <i>bearded wheat.</i>
	Herrén, <i>milling corn.</i>

Espélta,

Espéltia, spelt.	Tallo de la espiga, the stem.
Centeno, rye.	Nudo de la espiga, the knot under the ear.
Cevada, barley.	Nudo del tallo, the joyn't of the stem.
Avéna, oats.	Gránza, the husk or chaff.
Arráz, rice.	Mijo, millet.
Mijo grande, or } Indian Ráspa de la espiga, the	Maíz, wheat. beard.

Legúmbres,

Pulses.

Alverjón, a great vetch.	Lantéja, a lentil.
Garvanzos, a sort of Spanish peas.	Altramúz, a lupin.
Arvéjas, or } peas.	Judía, a french bean.
Guisantes, } peas.	Zicerchás, tares.
Hába, a bean.	Cáscara, the cod.
	Holléjo, the husk.

Roots, Plants, and Herbs.

Rayces, Plantás, y Yérvas.

Ajénjo, wormwood.	Cóles, coleworts.
'Apio, smallage.	Bérza, cabbage.
'Ajo, garlick.	Repollo, a sprout.
Enéldo, dil.	Colyflór, coliflower.
Anís, aniseed.	Calabáza, a pumpon or gourd.
Armuéllés, orach, or golden flowers.	Pepino, a cucumber.
Alcachófa, an artichoke.	Perekil de la mar, samphire.
Espárago, asparagus.	Mastuérzo, garden cresses.
Abrótano, southerntwood.	Escalona, a scallion.
Acélga, white beet.	Escaróla, endive.
Blédo, a blite.	Espináca, spinage.
Borrája, borage.	Hinójo, fennel.
Cárdo, a thistle.	Hoblón, hops.
Zanahórias, carrots.	Lechúga, a lettice.
Voléza, cervil.	Lechúga cerráda, or Murciána, lettuce.
Hóngoo, a mushroom.	Lechúga crespa, curl'd lettice.
Chirivía, a skirret.	
Achicória, succory or endive.	Nábo,

Nábo, <i>a turnep.</i>	Genciána, <i>gentian.</i>
Cebólla, <i>an onion.</i>	Camedréos de águia, <i>ger-</i> <i>mander.</i>
Acetósa, <i>french sorrel.</i>	Hierba puntéra, <i>houseleek.</i>
Romáza, <i>long sorrel.</i>	Veléno, <i>benbane.</i>
Azedéra, <i>common sorrel.</i>	Marrúbio, <i>borebound.</i>
Perexil, <i>parsley.</i>	Matricária, <i>feverfew.</i>
Puérra, <i>a leek.</i>	Málvas, <i>mallows.</i>
Verdolága, <i>purslain.</i>	Coróna de rey, <i>melilot.</i>
Ruíponces, <i>rampions.</i>	Torongíl, <i>balm.</i>
Xaramágó, or } <i>rocket.</i>	Mercuriál, <i>mercury.</i>
Ruquéta, } <i>Rúda, rue.</i>	Mil hójas, or } <i>milfoil.</i>
Sálvia, <i>sage.</i>	Ciénto en rama, } <i>milfoil.</i>
Criadilla de tierra, <i>a trufle</i> or <i>pignut.</i>	Corazoncillo, <i>St. John's</i> <i>wort.</i>
Marjeróna, <i>sweet marje-</i> <i>rom.</i>	Nárdo, <i>spikenard.</i>
Culántro, <i>coriander.</i>	Orégano, <i>origanum.</i>
Agárico, <i>agarick.</i>	Tabáco, <i>tobacco.</i>
Gaféte, or } <i>agrimony.</i>	Parietária, <i>pellitory.</i>
Epatório, } <i>agrimony.</i>	Cepacavállo, <i>ground thistle.</i>
Acíbar, <i>aloes.</i>	Dormidéra, <i>poppey.</i>
Angélica, <i>angelico.</i>	Perficária, <i>artemisart.</i>
Celidónia, <i>celandine.</i>	Pervínca, <i>perwinkle.</i>
Betónica, <i>betony.</i>	Rósia montés, <i>piony.</i>
Bistórta, <i>bistort or snake-</i> <i>weed.</i>	Llantén, <i>plantain.</i>
Manzanilla, <i>camomile.</i>	Polipódio, <i>polypody.</i>
Culantrillo de pózo, <i>mai-</i> <i>den-bair.</i>	Axenúz, or } <i>bishop's wort.</i>
Centória, <i>centory.</i>	Neguilla, } <i>bishop's wort.</i>
Coloquintida, <i>coloquintida.</i>	Hierba cidréra, <i>briony.</i>
Verbásco, or } <i>wolfslade or</i> <i>Gardolóbo, } <i>greathungwort.</i></i>	Poléo, <i>penniroyal.</i>
Hamapóla, <i>a poppey.</i>	Elebóro, <i>belebore.</i>
Dítamo, <i>ditony.</i>	Ruybárbo, <i>rheubarb.</i>
Artadéguia, <i>fleabane.</i>	Sanguinária, <i>bloodwort.</i>
Eléboro, <i>belebore.</i>	Sanícula, <i>self-heal.</i>
Tártago, <i>spurge.</i>	Sarazinésca, <i>heart-wort.</i>
	Satyrión, <i>ragwort.</i>
	Saxifrágia, <i>saxifrage.</i>
	Escabiosa, <i>scabious.</i>
	Escamónéa, <i>scammony.</i>
	Cebólla

Cebolla albarrana, <i>a wild onion.</i>	Líno, <i>flax.</i>
Alfórvas, <i>fenugreek.</i>	Cegúta, <i>bemlock.</i>
Hierba cána, <i>ground-sell.</i>	Halécho, <i>fern.</i>
Valeriána, <i>valerian.</i>	Palomilla, <i>fumitory.</i>
Verbéna, <i>vervein.</i>	Yézgo, <i>danewort, or dwarf elder.</i>
Bránca ursina, <i>bears foot.</i>	Júnco, <i>a rush.</i>
Acónito, <i>wolfsbane.</i>	Cerrája, <i>sow thistle.</i>
Espliégo, <i>lavender spike.</i>	Mandrágora, <i>mandrake.</i>
Amór del horteláno, <i>burdock.</i>	Morella, <i>night shade.</i>
Perexil de áqua, <i>water parsley.</i>	Correhuéla, <i>knot grass.</i>
Tamariz silvéstre, <i>tamisk shrub.</i>	Ortiga, <i>a nettle.</i>
Afarabáca, <i>asarabacca.</i>	Valéla, <i>pepperwort.</i>
Calaminto, <i>catmint.</i>	Azafrán, <i>saffron.</i>
Caña, <i>a reed.</i>	Xabonéra, <i>soap-wort.</i>
Doradilla, <i>mules fern.</i>	Alfalfa, <i>darnel.</i>
Cáñamo, <i>bemp.</i>	Albaháca, <i>sweet basil.</i>
	Hierbabuéná, <i>mint.</i>
	Sépol, <i>wild thyme.</i>
	Tomillo, <i>thyme.</i>

Flóres,

Jacínto, <i>the hyacinth.</i>
Jasmin, <i>jasmin.</i>
Junquillo, <i>the junquil.</i>
Azucéna, <i>a lilly.</i>
Máya, <i>a daisy.</i>
Narcísso, <i>the daffodil.</i>
Clavél, <i>a pink.</i>
Amaránto, <i>the velvet flower.</i>
Peónia, <i>a peony.</i>

Colores,

Morádo, <i>purple.</i>
Colór de auróra, <i>aurora colour.</i>
Blanco, <i>white.</i>

Flowers.

Vellorita, <i>a cowslip.</i>
Ranúnculo, <i>the ranunculus.</i>
Rósa, <i>a rose.</i>
Maravilla, <i>a marigold.</i>
Girasol, <i>the sun-flower.</i>
Tulipán, <i>a tulip.</i>
Violéta, <i>a violet.</i>
Alelí, <i>a white violet.</i>
Capullo, <i>a rose-bud.</i>

Colours.

Colór de ladrillo, <i>brick colour.</i>
Azul, <i>blue.</i>
Colombino, <i>dove-colour.</i>
Limonádo,

Limonádo, <i>lemon colour.</i>	Grána, <i>scarlet.</i>
Amúsco, <i>filamot.</i>	Leonádo, <i>tawny.</i>
Colór de lláma, <i>flame colour.</i>	Negro, <i>black.</i>
Colór de fuégo, <i>fire colour.</i>	Anaranjádo, <i>orange colour.</i>
Carmesí, <i>crimson.</i>	Azeitunádo, <i>olive colour.</i>
Párdo, <i>grey.</i>	Róxo, or } red. Colorádo, }
Ceniciénto, <i>ash colour.</i>	Berméjo, <i>reddish.</i>
Amarillo, <i>yellow.</i>	Colór de rosa, <i>rose colour.</i>
Encarnádo, <i>carnation.</i>	Vérde, <i>green.</i>
Virtúdes y Vícios, buénas y málas Calidádes de los Hómbres.	Colór de mar, <i>sea-green.</i>

Virtues and Vices, good and bad Qualities
of Men.

R Ecatádo, <i>cautious.</i>	Reboltoso, <i>mutinous.</i>
Diéstro, <i>dextrous.</i>	Bien criado, <i>well-bred.</i>
Dócil, <i>docil.</i>	Cortés, <i>courteous.</i>
Galán, <i>gallant.</i>	Gráve, <i>sober.</i>
Símple, <i>barmless.</i>	Jústo, <i>just.</i>
Agúdo, <i>sharp.</i>	Prudente, <i>discreet.</i>
Vívo, <i>sprightly.</i>	Desvergonzádo, <i>impudent.</i>
Sutil, <i>subtil.</i>	Fogoso, <i>fiery.</i>
Chocarréro, <i>given to buffoonry.</i>	Impertinente, <i>impertinent.</i>
Nécio, <i>foolish.</i>	Importuno, <i>troublesome.</i>
Astuto, <i>crafty.</i>	Ligero, <i>light.</i>
Lóco, <i>mad.</i>	Descuidado, <i>careless.</i>
Malicioso, <i>malicious.</i>	Temerario, <i>rash.</i>
Temeroso, <i>fearful.</i>	Afable, <i>affable.</i>
Espantadizo, <i>apt to be frightened.</i>	Amigable, <i>friendly.</i>
Valeroso, <i>brave.</i>	Bizarro, <i>brave.</i>
Tonto, <i>stupid.</i>	Charitativo, <i>charitable.</i>
Fantástico, <i>fantastical.</i>	Cásto, <i>chaste.</i>
Embustero, <i>deceitful.</i>	Constante, <i>constant.</i>
Desatinado, <i>distracted.</i>	Devoto, <i>devout.</i>
Grossero, <i>clownish.</i>	Diligente, <i>diligent.</i>
	Fiel, <i>faithful.</i>
	Generoso, <i>generous.</i>
	Humilde,

Humilde, <i>bumble.</i>	Rabioso, <i>outrageous.</i>
Misericordioso, <i>merciful.</i>	Alégre, <i>merry.</i>
Paciente, <i>patient.</i>	Ufano, <i>gay.</i>
Religioso, <i>religious.</i>	Indeciso, <i>irresolute.</i>
Ambicioso, <i>ambitious.</i>	Zeloso, <i>jealous.</i>
Sobérbio, <i>proud.</i>	Adúltero, <i>an adulterer.</i>
Avariénto, <i>covetous.</i>	Rufian, <i>a ruffian.</i>
Hypócrita, <i>an hypocrite.</i>	Matadór, <i>a murderer.</i>
Cobárde, <i>a coward.</i>	Blasphemadór, <i>a blasphemer.</i>
Holgazán, <i>idle.</i>	Salteadór, <i>a bigway-man.</i>
Altivo, <i>haughty.</i>	Juradór, <i>a swearer.</i>
Chismoso, <i>a tale-bearer.</i>	Calumniadór, <i>a flanderer.</i>
Aduladór, <i>a flatterer.</i>	Murmuradór, <i>a censurer.</i>
Goloso, <i>a glutton.</i>	Hechicéro, <i>a sorcerer.</i>
Desleal, <i>faithless.</i>	Tramposo, <i>a cheat.</i>
Desagradecido, <i>ungrateful.</i>	Homicida, <i>a murderer.</i>
Inhumano, <i>inhumane</i>	Incestuoso, <i>incestuous.</i>
Insolente, <i>insolent.</i>	Ladrón, <i>a thief.</i>
Luxurioso, <i>lewd.</i>	Mentiroso, <i>a lyar.</i>
Porfiado, <i>positive.</i>	Perjuró, <i>perjur'd.</i>
Perezoso, <i>slackful.</i>	Pérfido, <i>perfidious.</i>
Pródigo, <i>prodigal.</i>	Profano, <i>profane.</i>
Váno, <i>vain.</i>	Rebelde, <i>a rebel.</i>
Mugeriégo, <i>given to women.</i>	Sacrilego, <i>a sacrilegious person.</i>
Atrevido, <i>bold.</i>	Traidor, <i>a traitor.</i>
Colérico, <i>passionate.</i>	

Pártes de un Réino,
Parts of a Kingdom.

Província, <i>a province.</i>	Aldéa, <i>a village.</i>
Ciudad, <i>a city.</i>	Distrítio, <i>a district.</i>
Villa, <i>a market town.</i>	

Pártes de una Ciudád,
Parts of a City.

Cása, <i>a house.</i>	Iglesia, or } <i>a church.</i>
Tienda, <i>a shop.</i>	Témplo, } <i>a church.</i>

Palácio,

Palácio, a palace.	Mercádo, a market.
Hospitál, an hospital.	Carnicería, the shambles.
Cása de la villa, or del ayuntamiento, the town-house.	Encrucijáda, a cross way. Lónja, or } an exchange. Bólsa,
Tribunal, a court of justice.	Cárcel, a prison.
Arsenal, an arsenal.	Muros, or } the walls. Murállas,
Académia, an academy.	Fortificacíones, fortifications.
Colégio, a college.	Plazuéla, a little market or square.
Calle, a street.	
Callejón, an ally.	
Calléja, or } a lane.	
Callejuéla, }	

*Of the Inhabitants of Cities,
De los Moradóres de las Ciudádes.*

Niño, a child.	El poblácho, or la plébe, the mob.
Muchácho, a boy.	Canálla, the rabble.
Muchácha, a girl.	Ciudadáno, a citizen.
Mózo, a youth.	Oficial, a tradesman.
Hómbre, a man.	Mecánico, a mechanick.
Mugér, a woman.	Labradór, a peasant.
Viéjo, an old man.	Aldeáno, a countryman.
Viéja, an old woman.	Pícaro, a rogue.
Decrépito, one that is decrepit.	Esclávo, a slave.
Cóxo, lame of the legs.	Platéro, a goldsmith.
Mánco, lame of the hands.	Libréro, a bookseller.
Ciégo, blind.	Barbéro, a barber.
Sórdo, lame.	Mercadér de séda, a mercer.
Magistrado, a magistrate.	Mercadér de páño, a woollen-draper.
Nóble, noble.	Mercadér de liénzo, a linnen-draper.
Hidálgó, a gentleman.	Sástre, a taylor.
Caballéro, a knight.	Costuréra, a seamstress.
Tendéro, a shop-keeper.	Sombrerero, a batter.
Mercadér, or Hombre de negocio, a merchant.	Calcetéro, a bofier.
	Zapatéro,

Zapatéro, a shoe-maker.	Juéz, a judge.
Herréro, a smith.	Carceléro, a goalor.
Albéitar, a farrier.	Verdúgo, the executioner.
Cerrajéro, a lock-smith.	Ceréro, a wax-chandler.
Lavandéra, a laundress.	Ganapán, or Esportilléro, a porter to carry burdens.
Comádre, } or Partéra, } a midwife.	Remendón, a bootber, or cobler.
Médico, a physician.	Tataravuélo, a grandfather's grandfather.
Cirujáno, a surgeon.	Bissavuélo, a great grandfather.
Charlatán, a mountebank.	Avuélo, a grandfather.
Sacamuélas, a toothdrawer.	Pádre, a father.
Silléro, a sadler.	Mádre, a mother.
Carpintéro, a carpenter.	Hijo, a son.
Peón, a labourer.	Hija, a daughter.
Albañil, a bricklayer.	Niéto, a grandson.
Pintór, a painter.	Bisniéto, a great grandson.
Panadéro, a baker.	Hermáno, a brother.
Carnicéro, a butcher.	Cuñádo, a brother in law.
Frutéra, a fruiterer.	Padrástro, a step-father.
Verduléra, an herb woman.	Madrástra, a stepmother.
Pasteléro, a pastry-cook.	Suégro, the husband's, or the wife's father.
Tabernéro, a vintner.	Nuéra, the wife of the son.
Cervezéro, a brewer.	Yérno, the husband of the daughter.
Mesonéro, an inn-keeper.	Prímo hermáno, a cousin german.
Ventéro, the same.	Tío, an uncle.
Reloxéro, a watchmaker.	Sobrino, a nephew.
Pregonéro, a cryer, or bawker.	Prímo segúndo, a second cousin.
Joyéro, a jeweller.	Marido, an husband.
Boticário, an apothecary.	Mugér, a wife.
Buhonéro, a pedlar.	Nóvio, a bridegroom.
Vidriéro, a glazier.	Desposado, one betrothed.
Carbonéro, a collier.	U Ahijádo,
Jardinéro, a gardiner.	
Letrádo, a learned man, or a lawyer.	
Procuradór, a sollicitor.	
Abogádo, an advocate, or counsellor at law.	

Ahijado, a godson.	Víudo, a widower.
Padrino, a godfather.	Hermáno de leche, a foster-brother.
Madrina, a godmother.	
Compádre, an be-gaffip.	Níño de la piédra, a sounding.
Comádre, a gossip.	
Compañero, or } a com-	Níño supuesto, a false child.
Camaráda, } panion.	Bastárdo, a bastard.
Mellizo, a twin.	Donzélula, a maiden.
Cofráde, a brother of the same society.	Mugér casada, a married woman.
Cofradía, a guild or society.	Mugér parida, a lying-in woman.
Communidád, a company.	
Huérzano, an orphan.	'Ama de leche, a wet nurse.
Soltéro, a batchelor.	Mancéba, a lewd mistress.
Heredéro, an heir.	Raméra, or, } a whore.
Tutór, a tutor.	Púta,
Curadór, a guardian.	

A House, and all that belongs to it.

Casa, y todo lo perteneciente a ella.

Casa, a house.	Artezón, an arch'd cieling.
El solár, the ground the house stands upon.	Bóveda, a vault.
Cimiento, the foundation.	'Alto de casa, a story of a house.
Paréd, a wall.	Escaléra, a stair-case.
Pátio, a court.	Tejado, a til'd roof.
Facháda, the front.	Puerta, a door.
Un andár or alto, a floor.	Passadízo, a passage or entry.
Portál, a porch.	
Ventána, a window.	Corral, a court-yard.
Entresuélo, a low room or floor between the upper and lower that are more lofty.	Trascorrál, a back-yard.
Zaquizamí, or ciélo, the cieling; also the space between the cieling and the roof of a house, and a cock-loft.	Cámara, a bed-chamber.
	Aposénto, or } a chamber.
	Pieza,
	Quárto, an apartment.
	Anticámara, an antichamber.
	Requádra, a back room.
	Sala, a ball.
	Corredór,

Corredór, a gallery.	Umbrál, the threshold.
Retréte, a closet.	Bastidóres de la puérta, the frame of the door.
Estúdio, a study.	
Armário, or } a cupboard.	Postigo, a wicket.
Alazéna, } Miradór, } a balcony.	Quícos, or } Góznes, } binges.
Escaparáte, a press for cloaths, or the like.	
Guárda róba, a wardrobe.	Cerradúra, a lock.
Alcóva, an alcove.	Cerradúra de gólp, a spring-lock.
Desván, a garret.	Candádo, a padlock.
Balcón, or } a balcony.	Pestillo, the bolt of a lock.
Miradór, } Azutéa, the flat roof of an house.	Cerrójo, a bolt.
Camaranchón, a cockloft.	Lláve, a key.
Tórre, a tower.	Ventanilla, a little window.
Bodéga, or } a cellar.	Picapórte, a latch.
Cuéva, } Repostería, the butler's room.	Tránca de puérta, the bar of a door.
Despénsha, a buttery or pan- try.	Guárdas de la lláve, the wards of a lock.
Cozina, a kitchin.	Cañuto de lláve, the pipe of a key.
Caballeríza, the stable.	Vidriéra, the glass of the window.
Perrería, a dog-kennel.	Réjas de ventána, the bars of a window.
Palomár, a dove-house.	Escaléra de caracól, a winding stair-case.
Gallinéro, a hen-roost.	Llános de escaléra, the landing places of stairs.
Jardín, a garden.	Descánso de escaléra, the half pace of stairs.
Párque, a park.	Gráda, or } a step.
Priváda, or } the privy.	Escalón, } a step.
Necessária, }	Escaléra secreta, backstairs.
Coronilla del edificio, the top of the structure.	Víga, a beam.
Téja, a tile.	Vigón, the girder, or main beam.
Pizárra, a slate.	Tábla, a board.
Rípia, a shingle.	Cruzéro, a rafter.
'Ala de tejado, the eves of the house.	U 2 Ladrillo,
Canál, the gutter.	

Ladrillo, a brick.	Rodapiés, the bases of the bed.
Paré de en medio, the party-wall.	Tapete, a carpet.
Paré de cal y canto, a wall of lime and stone.	Sávanas, sheets.
Tabique, a lath and plaster partition.	Frazadas, blankets.
Cal, lime or plaster.	Covertór, the counterpane.
Argamássia, mortar.	Almohádas, pillows.
Encostradura de paré, the plaster of a wall.	Tapicería, tapestry.
Yésslo, very fine white lime.	Pintura, or quadro, a picture.
Jalbégue, white-wash.	Espéjo, a looking-glass.
Mésia, a table.	Candelero, a candlestick.
Bánco, a bencb.	Despaviladéras, snuffers.
Silla, a cbair.	Araña, a branch to hold many candles.
Silla de brázos, an arm-chair.	Yésca, tinder.
Taburéte, a chair with a back.	Pajuéla, a match.
Sitiál, a stool without a back.	Pedernál, a flint.
Banquillo, a stool.	Eslabón, the steel to strike fire.
Cáxa, a box.	Orinál, a chamber-pot.
Arca, or arcón, a chest.	Colchón, a quilt to lye on.
Caxón, a case of drawers.	Cólcha, a quilt to lay on the bed.
Tiradór, a drawer.	Cátre, a couch.
Escritório, a cabinet.	Cáma de campo, a field-bed.
Cáma, a bed.	Testéra de cáma, the bed's-head.
Lécho, the part of the bed that is laid on.	Colúnas de cáma, the bed-posts.
Armadura, or maderáge de cáma, a bedstead.	Xergón, a straw-bed.
Ciélo de la cáma, the bed's tester.	Estéra, a mat.
Cortinas de cáma, bed-curtains.	Calentadór de cáma, a warming pan.
	Chimenéa, a kitchen.
	Respiradéro, or cañón de chimenéa, the funnel of the chimney.
	Moríllos,

Moríllos, <i>andirons.</i>	Herráda, <i>a bucket or pail.</i>
Fuélls, <i>bellows.</i>	Cúbo, <i>a tub.</i>
Tenázas, <i>tongues.</i>	Lexía, or } lye. Coláda, } lye.
Pála, or badíl, <i>a shovel.</i>	Xabón, <i>soap.</i>
Guárda fuégo, <i>a skreen.</i>	Levadúra, <i>leaven.</i>
Urgadór, atisadór, <i>a poker.</i>	Rodilla de cozina, <i>a coarse kitchin cloth.</i>
Olla, <i>a pottage-pot.</i>	Estrópájo, <i>a dish-clout.</i>
Tapadéra, <i>the pot-lid.</i>	Pála del horno, <i>the peel for the oven.</i>
Afia, <i>the ear of the pot.</i>	Harína, <i>meal.</i>
Puchéro, <i>a pipkin.</i>	Salvádos, <i>bran.</i>
Cucharón, <i>a ladle.</i>	Artefia, <i>a tray.</i>
Caldéra, <i>a kettle.</i>	Mantéles, <i>table-cloth.</i>
Escalfadór, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Servilléta, <i>a napkin.</i>
Trévedes, <i>a trevet.</i>	Aguamanil, <i>an ewer.</i>
Hornillo, <i>a stove.</i>	Almofia, <i>a bason.</i>
Horno, <i>an oven.</i>	Toálla, <i>a towel.</i>
Sartén, <i>a frying-pan.</i>	Platillos, <i>plates.</i>
Cázo, <i>a sauce-pan.</i>	Cuchíllo, <i>a knife.</i>
Cazuéla, <i>a little pan.</i>	Tenedór, <i>a fork.</i>
Escumadéra, <i>a skimmer.</i>	Saléro, <i>salt.</i>
Parrillas, <i>a gridiron.</i>	Pláto, <i>a dish.</i>
Coladéro, <i>a cullander, or streiner.</i>	Escudilla, <i>a porringer.</i>
Cedázo, <i>a sieve.</i>	Cuchára, <i>a spoon.</i>
Rállo, <i>a grater.</i>	Tajadór, <i>a chopping-block.</i>
Agúja de mechár, <i>a lard- ing-pin.</i>	Jarro, <i>a mug.</i>
Affadór, <i>a spit.</i>	Táza, <i>a cup or dish.</i>
Azeitéra, or } an oyl pot.	Salvilla, <i>a salver.</i>
Alcúza, } an oyl pot.	Flásco, <i>a flask, or bottle.</i>
Vinagéra, <i>a cruet.</i>	Vídrio, <i>a glafs.</i>
Almiréz, <i>a metal mortar.</i>	Mondadiéntes, <i>a tooth- picker.</i>
Mortéro, <i>a stone mortar.</i>	Mayordómo, <i>a steward.</i>
Máno de mortéro, <i>a pestle.</i>	Trinchante, <i>a carver.</i>
Braferíllo, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Secretário, <i>a secretary.</i>
Redóma, <i>a vial.</i>	Camaréro, <i>a chamberlain, or valet de chambre.</i>
Sumidéro, <i>a sink.</i>	U 3 Despenséro,
Cántaro, <i>a pitcher.</i>	

Despenséro, a caterer, or clerk of the kitchen.	Maéstre fala, a sewer. Bodeguéro, a butler.
Capellán, a chaplain.	Repostéro, a butler.
Limosnéro, an almoner.	Halconéro, a falconer.
Páge, a page.	Cozinéro, a cook.
Lacayo, a footman.	Galopín, a scullion.
Cochéro, a coachman.	Portéro, a porter.
Mózo de cabállos, a groom.	Caséro, or hu-
Caballerizo, a gentleman of the borse.	ésped, du- } the land. énō, or ámo } lord. de la cása,
Copéro, a cupbearer.	

Of Country Affairs.

De las cósas del Cámpo.

Alquería, a country or farm house.	Rastrillo, the barrow.
Quintéro, a farmer.	Sembradór, a sower.
Boyéro, or } a cow-keeper.	Escardadór, a weeder.
Vaquéro, } Vaquero, a swine- porquierízo, } porquerizo, herd.	Rozadór, a weeding-book.
Porquéro, or } a swine- porquerízo, } herd.	Segadór, a reaper.
Pastór, a shepherd.	Guadáña, a scythe.
Zurrón, a scrip.	Trillo, a flail.
Cayádo, a shepherd's crook.	Hórca, a fork.
Hónida, a sling.	Viéldo, a winnowing fan.
Orteláno, or } a gardiner.	Pescadór, a fisher-man.
Jardinéro, } Jardiner, a gardiner.	Red barredéra, a drag-net.
Cavadór, a ditcher.	Vára, or caña pára pescár, a fishing rod.
Vinadéro, a vine dresser.	Sedál de la cáña, a fishing- line.
Azáda, or } a spade.	Anzuélo, a fishing-book.
Azadón, } Azadón, a spade.	Cazadór, a huntsman.
Aradór, or } a plough- Labradór, } man.	Cébo, a bait.
Arádo, a plough.	Líga, birdlime.
Estéva, or } a plough Manzára, } handle.	Jáula, a cage.
Réja del arádo, a plough- share.	Obréro, or } a day la- Jornaléro, } bourer.
	Añéro, a keeper of ass.
	Hómbre.

Hómbre del campo, a	Bóbeda de párras, an arbour.
Campo que descánsa, a	Labérynto, a labyrinth.
fallow-field.	Grúta, a grotte.
Tiérra entre los súlcos, a	Cascáda, a cascade.
ridge.	Fuénte, a fountain.
Súlco, a furrow.	Chórro de agua, a water-spout.
Trigo en hiérba, green	Pilón de fuénte, the vase of a fountain.
corn.	Encañado, or } a bill, or } an aqueduct.
Tiérra inculta, land not	Montaña, } mountain. Hortaliza, all sorts of
till'd.	Colládo, } a little bill. herbage.
Mónte, or }	Cerro, a rising ground.
Zánja, a ditch.	Válle, a valley.
Langúna, a lake, or marsh.	Abísmo, a bottomless pit.
Llanúra, a plain.	Rástro, a track.
Peña, or }	Plánta, a plant.
Róca,	Camino real, the high-way.
Peñasco, a great rock.	Sénda, or }
Despeñadéro, a precipice.	Vereda, } a path.
Bósque, a forest.	Pisáda, or }
Espánada, a curious plain.	Rástro, } a track.
Máta, a thicket.	Cavalgadura, a beast for the saddle.
Zárza, a bramble.	Carréta, a waggon.
Espína, a thorn.	Cárro, a cart.
Prádo, a meadow.	Ruéda, a wheel.
Vergél, a garden, a bower.	Ráyo de ruéda, the spoke of a wheel.
Huérta, an orchard.	Llántas, or }
Jardín, a garden.	Cámbas, } the wheel.
'Era de jardín, a bed in a	Cúbo de ruéda, the nave of the wheel.
garden.	'Exe de ruéda, the axle-tree.
Gloriéta de jardín, a bed	Estáca, or }
of flowers.	Clavo, } wheel.
Almáciéga, a seed-plot.	Caléssia, a calocbe or chaise.
	Litéra, a borse litter.
	'Andas, the shafts.
	Cóche, or carróza, a coach.
	U 4 Rástra,

Rástra, or } a sledge.	Bolsa, a purse.
Nárria, } a basket.	Costál, or } a sack.
Césta, a basket.	Sáco,
Canásta, a flasket.	Maléta, a portmanteau.
Espuérta, a dirt-basket.	Talégo, a bag.
Cherrión, a dung-cart.	Valija, a cloak-bag.
Banásta, a great hamper.	Zurrón, a budget or scrip.
Alfója, a wallet.	

The Church, and Things pertaining to Religion.
Iglésia, y cosas Religiósas.

Náve de iglésia, the iſle of a church.	Misſial, a miss-book.
Cimbório, the dome.	Sotána, a cassock.
Pináculo, a pinnacle.	Sobrepelliz, a surplice.
Chóro, the choir.	Roquéte, a short surplice.
Capilla, a chapel.	Bonéte, a cap.
Atríl, a desk.	Mitra, a miter.
Sacristía, the vestry.	Báculo, a crozier.
Campanário, the belfry.	Patriárcha, a patriarch.
Campána, a bell.	Arzobíspo, an archbishop.
Badájo, the clapper of the bell.	Obíspo, a bishop.
Pila de bautizár, the font.	Obispado, a bishoprick.
Isópo, a sprinkler.	Diocesis, a diocese.
Confessionário, a confession- seat.	Coadjutor, a coadjutor.
Tribúna, a tribune, or gal- lery.	Sufragáneo, a suffragan.
Cimentério, the church- yard.	Sacerdóte, a priest.
Oſtário, the charnel.	Sacerdócio, priesthood.
Altár, an altar.	Diácono, a deacon.
Frontál, an antependium.	Subdiácono, a subdeacon.
Tabernáculo, or } the ta- bernacle.	Acólito, one that serves the priest at the altar.
Sagrário, a canopy.	Lector, a reader.
Pálio, a canopy.	Clérigo, a clergyman.
Mañél del altár, the altar- cloth.	Prelado, a prelate.
	Abad, an abbot.
	Abadessa, an abbess.
	Abadía, an abbey.
	Canónigo, a canon.
	Deán, a dean.
	Prevoste,

Prevóste, a provost.	Lección, a lesson.
Archidiácono, an arch-deacon.	Verséte, a verse.
Precentór, a precentor.	Sermón, a sermon.
Maéstre de chóro, the master of the choir.	Meditación, meditation.
Cantór, a singing-man.	Oración vocal, vocal prayer.
Sacristán, the vestry keeper.	Oración mental, mental prayer.
Prebendádo, a prebendary.	Predicár, to preach.
Cúra, the parson of a parish.	Hacér el catechísma, to catechize.
Paróchia, a parish.	Entérrar, or } sepultár, } to bury.
Vicário, a vicar.	Excommunión, excommunication.
Oficiál, an official.	Suspensión, suspension.
Promotór, a proctor.	Entredicho, an interdict.
Encomienda, a thing given in commendam.	Irregularidád, irregularity.
Bautísmo, baptism.	Descomulgár, to excommunicate.
Confirmación, confirmation.	Matrimónio, matrimony.
Comulgár, to receive the holy sacrament.	Iglésia cathédral, a cathedral church.
'Ordenes sáculos, holy orders.	Conventuál, the church of a monastery.
Ceremónia, a ceremony.	Parrochiál, a parish church.
Rúbrica, the rubrick.	Adviénto, the time of advent.
Rituál, a ritual.	Quarésma, the lent.
Oficio divino, divine service.	Témporas, ember-weeks.
Psaltério, the psalter.	Vigilia, an eve.
Psálmo, a psalm.	Ayúno, a fast.
Antíphona, an antiphon.	

Things relating to War.

Cosas tocantes a la Guerra.

Artillería, artillery, or great guns.	Cañón, a cannon.
Pieza de artillería, a canon.	Bóca de cañón, the mouth of the gun.
Tren de artillería, the train of artillery.	Fogón, the touch-hole.

Culáta

Culáta del cañón, <i>the breech</i> <i>of the gun.</i>	Lánza, <i>a lance.</i>
Carretón de cañón, <i>a car-</i> <i>riage of a great gun.</i>	Alabárda, <i>an halberd.</i>
Cargar, <i>to load.</i>	Partefana, <i>a partisan.</i>
Apuntár, <i>to level.</i>	Pica, <i>a pike.</i>
Disparár, <i>to fire.</i>	Alfange, <i>a cymiter.</i>
Tiro de cañón, <i>a canon-</i> <i>shot.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Desmontár un cañón, <i>to</i> <i>dismount a gun.</i>	Púno de la espáda, <i>the</i> <i>handle of the sword.</i>
Enclavár un cañón, <i>to nail</i> <i>up a gun.</i>	Pomo de la espáda, <i>the</i> <i>pommel of the sword.</i>
Culebrína, <i>a culverin.</i>	Guarnición de espáda, <i>the</i> <i>bilt of the sword.</i>
Falconéte, <i>a falconet.</i>	La hója, <i>the blade.</i>
Pedréro, <i>a passerero.</i>	Puñal, <i>a poniard.</i>
Cañón entero, <i>a whole</i> <i>cannon.</i>	Bayonéta, <i>a bayonet.</i>
Médio cañón, <i>a half can-</i> <i>non.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Petárdo, <i>a petard.</i>	Yélmo, <i>a whole helmet.</i>
Bómba, <i>a bomb.</i>	Celáda, <i>the same.</i>
Mortero, <i>a mortar-piece.</i>	Morrión, <i>a morrion.</i>
Granáda, <i>a grenade.</i>	Viséra, <i>the vizor of an</i> <i>helmet.</i>
Mosquéte, <i>a musket.</i>	Gorjál, <i>the gorget.</i>
Carabína, <i>a carbine.</i>	Peto, <i>a breast-plate.</i>
Escopéta, <i>a fire-lock.</i>	Coráza, <i>a cuirass.</i>
Pistóla, <i>a pistol.</i>	Espaldár, <i>the back-plate.</i>
Bála, <i>a bullet.</i>	Coffeléte, <i>a corset.</i>
Pólvora, <i>powder.</i>	Braceléte, <i>armour for the</i> <i>arms.</i>
Mécha, <i>match.</i>	Escarcelón, <i>armour from</i> <i>the waste to the thighs.</i>
Pedernál, <i>a flint.</i>	Grévas, <i>greaves for the</i> <i>thighs.</i>
Flécha, <i>an arrow.</i>	Inojéras, <i>armour for the</i> <i>knees.</i>
Dardo, <i>a dart.</i>	Broquél, <i>a buckler.</i>
Javalína, <i>a boar-spear.</i>	Escudo, <i>a shield.</i>
Hónda, <i>a sling.</i>	Adárga, <i>a target.</i>
Arco, <i>a bow.</i>	Cota de malla, <i>a coat of</i> <i>mail.</i>
Máza de armas, <i>a battle-</i> <i>axe.</i>	General,

General, <i>a general.</i>	Centinela, <i>a sentinel.</i>
Teniente general, <i>a lieu-tenant-general.</i>	Avanguardia, <i>the vanguard.</i>
Sargento mayor de batalla, <i>a major-general.</i>	Cuerpo de batalla, <i>the main body of the army.</i>
Maestre de campo, or coronel, <i>a colonel.</i>	Retaguardia, <i>the rear.</i>
Sargento mayor, <i>a major.</i>	Cuerpo de reserva, <i>the corps de reserve.</i>
Capitan, <i>a captain.</i>	Cuerpo de guardia, <i>the corps de guard.</i>
Teniente, <i>a lieutenant.</i>	Ala, <i>the wing of an army.</i>
Corneta, <i>a cornet.</i>	Batallón, <i>a battalion.</i>
Alférez, <i>an ensign.</i>	Regimiento, or Tercio, <i>a regiment.</i>
Sargento, <i>a serjeant.</i>	Trópa de caballos, <i>a troop of horse.</i>
Cabo de esquadrilla, <i>a corporal.</i>	Compañía de infantería, <i>a company of foot.</i>
Quadrillero, <i>a brigadier.</i>	Hilera, <i>a rank.</i>
Soldado, <i>a soldier.</i>	Fila, <i>a file.</i>
Caudillo, <i>a leader, or commander.</i>	Esquadrón, <i>a squadron.</i>
Tambor, <i>a drum.</i>	Mochillero, <i>a soldier's boy.</i>
Pifano, <i>a fife.</i>	Bagaje, <i>the baggage.</i>
Trompeta, <i>a trumpet.</i>	Vivandero, <i>a sutler.</i>
Atabál, <i>a kettle-drum.</i>	Partida, <i>a party.</i>
Soldado de acaballo, <i>a trooper.</i>	Corredores, <i>the forlornhope</i>
Soldado de apié, <i>a foot-soldier.</i>	Batidores, <i>discoverers.</i>
Dragón, <i>a dragoon.</i>	Murallas, or Muros, <i>walls.</i>
Piquero, <i>a pikeman.</i>	Almeña, <i>a bastilement.</i>
Mosquetero, <i>a musketeer.</i>	Parapeto, <i>the parapet.</i>
Escopetero, <i>a fusilier.</i>	Castillo, <i>a castle.</i>
Infante, <i>a foot soldier.</i>	Fuerte, <i>a fort.</i>
Infantería, <i>the infantry.</i>	Fortaleza, <i>a fortress.</i>
Caballería, <i>the cavalry.</i>	Fortificación, <i>a fortification.</i>
Artillero, <i>a gunner.</i>	Torre, <i>a tower.</i>
Bombardero, <i>a bombardier.</i>	Ciudadela, <i>a citadel.</i>
Ingeniero, <i>an engineer.</i>	Bastión, <i>a bastion.</i>
Minero, <i>a miner.</i>	Cortina,
Gastadór, <i>a pioneer.</i>	

Cortína, <i>a curtin.</i>	Contramárrcha, <i>a counter-march.</i>
Média lúna, <i>an half-moon.</i>	Escaramúza, <i>a skirmish.</i>
Tronéra, <i>a loop-hole.</i>	Batalla, <i>a battle.</i>
Terrapléno, <i>a rampart.</i>	Sítio, <i>a siege.</i>
Caballéro, <i>a cavalier, or mount.</i>	Quartél, <i>quarter.</i>
Rebelín, <i>a ravelin.</i>	Encamisada, <i>a camisade, or surprize.</i>
Contraescarpa, <i>the counter-scarp.</i>	Salida, <i>a sally.</i>
Barréra, <i>a barrier.</i>	Batir, <i>to batter.</i>
Fálfa brága, <i>a fausse-bray.</i>	Brécha, <i>a breach.</i>
Fóss, <i>the ditch.</i>	Escalada, <i>an escalade.</i>
Repécho, <i>a breast-work.</i>	Affalto, <i>an assault or attack.</i>
Garita, <i>a sentinel's box.</i>	Llamada, <i>the chamaide.</i>
Casemáta, <i>a casemate.</i>	Capitulación, <i>a capitulation.</i>
Galería, <i>or } a gallery.</i>	Guarnición, <i>a garrison.</i>
Corredór, <i>{ a gallery.</i>	Tocár la cáxa, <i>to beat the drum.</i>
Estráda cubierta, <i>the covered way.</i>	Levantár gente, <i>to raise men.</i>
Cestón, <i>a gabion.</i>	Pagár el sueldo, <i>to pay the men.</i>
Estáca, <i>a palisade.</i>	Batir la estráda, <i>to scour the country.</i>
Redúto, <i>a redoubt.</i>	Levantár el sitió, <i>to raise the seige.</i>
Ataláya, <i>a place for discovery, or the person that is to discover.</i>	Marchár a vanderas desplegadas, <i>to march with flying colours.</i>
Mánta, <i>a mantlet, or cover for men from the shot.</i>	Reforzár el exército, <i>to reinforce the army.</i>
Fagina, <i>fascines.</i>	Tocár a recogér, <i>to sound a retreat.</i>
Mína, <i>a mine.</i>	Entregár una plaza, <i>to surrender a place.</i>
Contramína, <i>a countermine.</i>	
Trinchéra, <i>a trench.</i>	
El real, <i>the camp.</i>	
Vituállas, <i>provisions.</i>	
Municiones, <i>ammunition.</i>	
Visoño, <i>a fresh water soldier.</i>	
Picoréro, <i>a marauder.</i>	

The Year, and its Parts.

El Año y sus Pártes.

'Año, *a year.*
Mes, *a month.*
Semána, *a week.*
Día, *a day.*
Nóche, *a night.*

Mañána, *the morning.*
Tárde, *the evening.*
Hóra, *an hour.*
Minúto, *a minute.*
Moménto, *a moment.*

The Months.

Lós Méses.

Enéro, *january.*
Febréro, *february.*
Márzo, *march.*
Abríl, *april.*
Máyo, *may.*
Júnio, *june.*

Júlio, *july.*
Agósto, *august.*
Setiémbre, *september.*
Octúbre, *october.*
Noviémbre, *november.*
Deciémbre, *december.*

The Days of the Week.

Diás de la Semána.

Domíngo, *sunday.*
Lunes, *monday.*
Mártes, *tuesday.*
Miércoles, *wednesday.*

Juéves, *thursday.*
Viérnes, *friday.*
Sábado, *saturday.*

Navegación.

Navío, or }
náve, or }
náo,
Navío de guéra, *a man
of war.*
Navío mercantil, *a mer-
chant-ship.*
Navío ligero, *a light ves-
sel for sailing.*
Galéra, *a galley.*
Galeáza, *a galeass.*
Galeón, *a galleon.*
Galeota, *a galliot.*

Navigation.

Fragáta, *a frigate.*
Sáica, *a saick.*
Caráca, *a carrack.*
Fústa, *a foist.*
Pináza, *a pinnace.*
Bárca de passage, *a ferry-
boat.*
Canóa, *a canoe.*
Pirágua, *a piragua.*
Góngola, *a sort of boat so
called.*
Esquíte, *a skiff.*

Barquéta,

Barquéta, or } a boat.	Véla del trinquete, the fore-sail.
Barquilla, } a float.	Véla cevadéra, the sprit-sail.
Bálsa, a float.	
Capitána real, the admiral.	
Almiránta, the vice-admiral.	Véla latina, a shoulder of mutton sail.
Armáda, a navy of men of war.	Rémo, an oar.
Flóta, a fleet of merchants.	Pála de rémo, the blade of the oar.
Esquádra, a squadron.	Troneras, the port-holes.
Abórdo, aboard.	Empavesadas, the nettings.
Pópa, the poop, or stern.	Gallardéte, a pendant.
Próa, the prow, or bead.	Vanderóla, a flag.
Tartána, a tartan.	Vandéra, the colours.
Bergantín, a brigantin.	Brúxula, the compass.
Navío de fuégo, a fireship.	Púnta de la próa, the stern.
Patáche, a patach.	Puente, the deck.
Felúca, a felucca.	Cubiérta, the same.
Bárca, a bark.	Tilla, the batches.
Bárco, or } a boat.	Bancos de galéra, the thoughts of a galley.
Batél, }	
Sentína, the well.	Timón, the helm.
Lástre, ballast.	Quilla, the keel.
Mastil, or } the mast.	Ancora, an anchor.
Arbol, }	
Arbol mayór, the main-mast.	Amárra, or } a cable.
La gábia, the round top.	Maróma, }
Trinquete, the fore-mast.	Sónda, the sounding lead.
Quilla del árbol, the step of the mast.	Piloto, a pilot, or master.
Enténa, a yard.	Guardián, the boat-swain.
Véla, a sail.	Marinero, a sailor.
Véla mayór, the main-sail.	Forzádos, or } gally-slaves.
Véla de gábia, the top-sail.	Galeotes, }
Perroquete, the top-gallant sail.	Espaldér, the bindermost rower in a gally.
Véla mesana, the mizzen-sail.	Vogavante, the fore-man in rowing.
	Cómitre, the boat-swain in a gally.

Coffario,

Cossario, or } a pyrate.	Cálma, a calm.
Piráta,	Viento en pópa, the wind
Cámara grande, the great cabin.	full astern.
Torménta, a tempest.	Coger el viento, to ply to windward.
Borrásca, a storm.	Ir a la bolina, to ply and tack upon a wind.
Bonanza, fair weather.	



Algúnas Sentencias, y Refránes Espanoles.

Some Spanish Sentences, and Proverbs.

A Zéite, vino, y amí-

go, antiguo.

Aunqué séas prudénte vié-
jo, no desdénnes el con-
fexo.

Aunqué compuésta la men-
tira, siémpre es vencida.

Aunqué vistáis à la móna
de seda, móna se quédá.

Asno de muchos, lóbos
de cómen.

A río rebuélto, ganáncia
de pescadóres.

Aquella es bien casada,
que ni tiéne suégra, ni
cuñada.

A quién dices tu puridád,
a éste das tu libertád.

Aquellos son ricos, que
tiénen amigos.

O IL, wine, and a friend,
the older the better.

Though you be a discreet old
man, do not disdain to be
advised.

A lyfe thoughb never so well
disguised, is always worsed.

Though you cloath a monkey
in silk, it is still a monkey ;
that is, there is no making

a silk purse of a sow's ear.

An ass that has many masters
is devour'd by the wolves ;
that is, every bodies busi-
ness is no bodies business.

It is best fishing in troubled
waters.

She is well marry'd, who has
neither mother, nor sister
in law.

When you entrust one with
your secret, you give up
your liberty.

They are rich who have
friends.

A quién

- A quién no le sobra el pan, *He that has not bread to
ne críe can.* *spare, must not keep a dog.*
- A quién dan, no escóge. *Beggar's must not be choosers;*
- A pádre guardadór, hijo *A niggardly father has a
gastadór.* *prodigal son.*
- Cáda ovéja, con su paréja. *All should match with their
equals.*
- ¡Ande yó caliénte, y ríase *So I keep myself warm, no
la gente.* *matter if people laugh at
me.*
- !Antes que te cáses, míra *Mind what you do before
lo que haces.* *you marry ; that is, look
before you leap.*
- Amigo del buén tiémpo, *A fair weather friend, turns
múdase con el viénto.* *with the wind.*
- Amigo quebrádo, aunque *Friendship that has been
soldado, nunca es sano.* *broken, may be patch'd up,
but will never be found.*
- Amigo de úno, enemigo *Be a friend but to one, and
de ningúno.* *an enemy to none.*
- A lo que puédes sólo, no *When you can do a thing
espéres a ótro.* *yourself, do not wait for
another.*
- Al desdichádo, pôco le vále *If a man is unfortunate, it a-
ser esforzádo.* *vails him little to be brave.*
- Allégate a los buénos, y *Keep good company, and you
férás úno dêllos.* *will be one of them.*
- Al hómbre osádo, la for- *Fortune favours the bold.*
túna le da la mano.
- Al buén varón, tiérras *A good man reckons all
ajénas patria le son.* *countries his own.*
- Al agradecido, mas de lo *Give a grateful man more
pedido.* *than he asks.*
- Al villáno dádle el pie, *Give a clown an incb, and
tomaráse la mano.* *be will take an ell.*
- Al que da el capón, dále *If one gives you a capon, give
la piérrna, y el alón.* *bim the leg, and ihe wing.*
- Al que tiene mugér her- *He that has a beautiful wife,*
mosa, ó castillo en *or a castle on the frontiers,*
frontéra, *or.*

- frontéra, ò viña en car-
réra, nunca le fálta
guerra. *or a vineyard upon the
road, is never without
quarrels.*
- A caballo dado, no le
miren el diénte. *Do not look a gift borse in
the mouth.*
- Burlaos con el ásno, daros
ha en la bárba con el
rábo. *Play with an ass, and he'll
slap you on the face with
his tail. No jesting with
fools.*
- Buén principio, la metád
es hécha. *A good beginning is half the
work done.*
- Bocádo de mal pan, ni lo
cómás, ni lo des a tu
can. *Do not eat a morsel of bad
bread, nor give it to your
dog.*
- Bocádo comido, no gána
amigo. *What is eaten gains no friend.
Past favours forgotten.*
- Bien áma, quién nunca
olvída. *That's a true lover, that
never forgets.*
- Bien sabe el sabio que no
sabe, el necio piénsa
que sabe. *A wise man is sensible of his
ignorance, a fool thinks
himself wise.*
- Béstia que ánda lláno, para
mi me la quíero no pára
mi hermáno. *I would have a beast that
carries easy for myself, not
for my brother; every one
loves the best for himself.*
- Cría cuervo, y sacárte ha
el ójo. *Breed up a crow, and he'll
pull out your eyes.*
- Con latín, rocín, y florín
andarás el mundo. *Latin, a nag, and money
will carry you through
the world.*
- Cóbra buena fama, y
échate en la cáma. *Get a good name, and you
may lie abed.*
- Cortesía de boca mucho
vále, y poco cuésta. *Good words are worth much,
and cost little.*
- Cantarillo que muchas vê-
ces va à la fuente, ò
déxa la ása, o la frénte. *The pitcher that goes often
to the well, comes home
broke at last.*
- Cada gallo cánta en su
muladár. *Every cock can crow on his
own dunghil.*

Cánta la rána, y no tiéne *The frog sings, and yet has*
pélo, ni lána. *neither hair, nor wooll.*

The poorest people are
merry.

Cása labráda, y viña plan- *A bouse ready built, and a*
táda. *vineyard ready planted,*
i. e. they are best to buy.

Dó éntra el bebér, sále el *When the wine is in, the wit*
sabér. *is out.*

Por dónde fuéres, ház *When you are at Rome, do*
cómo viéres. *as they do at Rome.*

Dó fálta dícha, por demás *Industry avails little with-*
es diligéncia. *out fortune.*

Do fuérza viéne, derécho *Might overcomes right.*
se piérde.

Dícen que éres buéno, *They say you are a good*
méte la mano en tu man, but put your hand
séno. *into your bosom ; that is,*
consult your own consci-
ence.

Dolór de espóso, dolór de *A husband's sorrow is like*
códo, duele mucho, y a pain in the elbow, very
dúra poko. *sharp, but soon over.*

De amigo reconciliádo, *Never trust a reconciled*
guárdate del cómo del friend any more than you
diáblo. *would the devil.*

Del agua mánsa me guárde *God deliver me from a still*
diós, que de la bráva water, for I will deliver
yo me fabré guardár. *myself from that which is*
rough ; alluding to the
tempers of people.

De luéngas vías, luéngas *Long travels produce great*
mentíras. *lies.*

De un hómbre nécio, à *A fool sometimes gives good*
véces buén consejo. *advice.*

Después de descalobrádo, *To break a man's bead, and*
untár el cásco. *then give him a plaister.*

Del lóco, porráda, ó mala *From a madman you may ex-*
palábra. *pect a blow, or ill language.*

Mas

Mas vale un tóma, que *A bird in hand, is worth dos te daré.* *two in the bush.*

Después de bebér, cárda *When people have drunk,*
único dice su parécer. *they are open hearted.*

Después de comér, dor- *After dinner sleep a while,*
mír; después de cenár, *after supper walk a mile.*
pássios mil.

Debáxo de buén sáyo, está *A good coat often covers a*
el hombre málo. *wicked fellow.*

De quién pónes los ójos en *Do not trust a man that*
el suélo, no fies tu di- *looks on the ground with*
néro. *your money: that is, an hypocrite.*

Guárdate, de hombre que *Take heed of a man that*
no habla, y de can que *does not talk, and of a*
no ládra. *dog that does not bark.*

Echár el mangó trás el de- *To throw the belve after*
stral. *the batchet.*

Echate a enfermár, y sa- *Take your bed, as if you*
brás quién te quíere bien, *were sick, and you will*
y quién mal. *know who does, and who*
does not love you.

El dar limósna, nunca *Giving alms never lessens the*
ménqua la bólfa. *stock.*

El perezoso si émpre es *A sloathful man is always*
menesteroso. *needy.*

El avariénto rico, no tiéne *A covetous rich man has*
pariente ni amigo. *neither relations, nor*
friends.

El bóbó si es calládo, por *A fool that says little passes*
sesúso es reputádo. *for a wise man.*

El que tiéne tejádos de vi- *He whose house is covered*
drio, no tire piedras al *with glaſs, muſt not throw*
de su vezíno. *stones at his neighbours.*

El huésped, y el péce, a *A guest and fish stinks when*
tres días, hiéde. *kept three days.*

El harto del ayuno, no *He that is full, has no com-*
tiéne duélo algúno. *passion on him that is*
fasting.

- El dar es honór, y el pe- *It is an honour to give, and
dír dolór.* *a trouble to ask.*
- El hómbre es el fuégo, la *Man is fire, and woman is*
mugér la estópa, viéne *tow, the devil comes and*
el diablo y sópla. *blows.*
- El viejo en su tiérra, y el *An old man in his own, and a*
mózo en la ajéna, mi- *young man in another coun-*
énten de úna manéra. *try, are both lyars alike.*
- El lóbo harto se méte *When the devil was sick, the*
fráile. *devil a monk would be;*
when the devil was well,
the devil a monk was be.
- En tal signo naci, que *I was born under such a*
quiero mas pára mi que *planet, that I have more*
pára ti. *kindness for my self than*
for you.
- En cásá lléna présto se *When the house is full, the*
guísa la céna. *supper is soon dress'd.*
- Fortúna, y azeitúna, a *Fortune, and olives some-*
véces, mucha, a véces *times come in a glut, and*
ningúna. *sometimes none at all.*
- Gáto escaldádo, del agua *The burnt cbild dreads the*
fría ha miédo. *fire.*
- Húmo, y gatéra, y mu- *A smoaky house, the rain*
gér parléra, échan el *coming in, and a scolding*
hómbre de su cásá fu- *wife, turn a man out of*
éra. *doors.*
- Hijo málo, mas vále do- *A wicked son is better sick*
liénte que sano. *than in health.*
- Júras del que áma mugér, *The oaths of one that loves*
no se han de creér. *a woman are not to be*
regarded.
- Los níños de pequeños, *Children must be chastised*
que no hái castigo de- *when they are little, for*
spués pára éllos. *it is afterwards too late.*
- Lo que los ójos no vén, *What the eye does not see,*
corazón no desfáea. *the heart does not rue.*
- Los yérros del médico, *The earth bides the mistakes*
la tiérra los cúbres. *of physicians.*

- Lo que no quierés pára ti, *Do as you would be done by.*
no lo quieras pára mi.
- La oración breve súbe al *A short prayer reaches heaven.*
- La traición apláce, mas *We love the treason, but not the traitor.*
- La mugér compuésta à su marido quita de puerta ajena. *A wife well dressed keeps her husband from running to other women.*
- La viuda rica, con un ójo llóra, y con el otro re-píca. *A rich widow weeps with one eye, and laughs with the other.*
- La mugér, y el vino, sa-can al hombre de tino. *Women and wine, make a man mad.*
- Múla, que hace hin, y mu-gér que parla latín, nunca hicieron buén fin. *A mule that kicks, and a woman that speaks latin, never come to a good end.*
- Mugér, viénto, y ventura presto se muda. *Women, wind, and fortune, are given to change.*
- Múcho sabe la raposa, pe-ro mas el que la toma. *The fox is very cunning, but he is more cunning that catches her.*
- Mugér placéra, de tódos dice, y tódos délla. *A gossiping woman talks of all people, and all of her.*
- Múcho fabía el cornudo, peró mas el que se los puso. *The cuckold was very subtle, but he was more crafty that cuckolded him.*
- Mete el ruín en tu pajár, y querérte há heredár. *Let a scoundrel into your barn, and he will contrive to be your heir.*
- Mas vale favór, que ju-sticia, ni razón. *Favour goes farther than justice and reason.*
- Mas vale pedir, y men-digar, que en la hórca perneár. *It is better to ask and beg, than to swing on the gallows.*
- Mal me quiéren mis com-madres, porque digo las verdádes. *My gossips bear me ill will, because I speak the truth.*

Mas vale guardár, que *It is better to be sparing,*
demandár. *than to beg.*

Mas vale mala avenéncia, *A bad composition is better*
que buéna senténcia. *than a favourable judg-*
ment.

Mas sabe el lóco en su *A mad man knows his own*
cásfa, que el cuerdo en *business better than a*
la ajéna. *wise man does another's.*

Mas vale a quién diós ay- *He derives better who has*
úda, que el que mucho *God's blessing, than he*
madrúga. *that rises early.*

Núnca espéres, que haga *Never expect your friend to*
tu amigo lo quo tu pu- *do that which you can do*
diéres. *yourself.*

No es náda, finó que má- *The matter is not much but*
tan a mi marido. *that they are killing my*
husband.

No hái mejor maéstra, que *There is no better mistress*
necessidad y pobréza. *than necessity and want.*

No hái mal tan lastimero, *No calamity so grievous, as*
cómo no tener dinéro. *to be without money.*

No hái mejor bocádo, que *No bit so sweet as that*
el hurtádo. *which is stollen.*

No hái peor sordo, que el *None so deaf as be that will*
que no quiere oír. *not bear.*

Níña, víña, peral, y ha- *A girl, a vineyard, a gar-*
bár, malos son de guar- *den of peas, and a field*
dár. *of beans, are hard to be*
kept.

Ni por cásfa, ni por víña, *Do not for the sake of an*
no tomes mugér ximia. *house, or of a vineyard*
take a monkey wife; that
is, deformed.

No hái sábado sin sol, ni *There is no saturday with-*
viéjo sin dolór, ni mo- *out some sunshine, nor*
cita sin arreból. *an old man without an*
ailng, nor a young
wench without a charm.

Ni de estópa, buéna ca- *There is no having a good
mísa ; ni de púta, bu- shirt of tow, nor a good
éna amiga.* friend of a whore.

Ni caválgues en pótro, ni *Do not ride upon a colt, nor
tu mugér alábes a ótro. praise your wife to ano-
ther man.*

Ni firmes cártá que no *Never sign any wriling with-
Léas, ni bébas agua que out reading, nor drink wa-
no véas.* ter without looking into it.

Ni à rico débas, ni à pô- *Never owe money to a rich
bre prométas.* man, nor promise any thing
to a poor one.

Nécios, y porfiádos hácen *Fools, and obstinate people
ricos los letrádos.* enrich lawyers.

Ovéja que bála, bocádo *The sheep that bleats loose
piérde.* a mouthful.

Oír, ver, y callár, récias *It is very bard to bear, see,
cósas son de obrár.* and say nothing.

Por ningún tempéro, *Whatsoever the weather is,
déxes el camino real do not leave the bigway
por el sendéro.* to follow the path.

Por hacér placér al suéño, *Through indulging of sleep,
ni fáya, ni camisa téngo.* I have neither petticoat,
nor smock.

Por mucho madrugár, no *Rising early makes it not
amanéce mas áina.* day the sooner.

Póco, y en paz, mucho *A little in peace is much to
se me haz.* me.

Por el hílo, sacarás el o- *You will find the clue by the
villo ; y por lo passado, tbread, and what is to
lo no venido.* come by what is past.

Por dinéro, báila el pér- *The dog dances for money ;
ro.* money makes the mare to
go.

Por ser Réy, se quiébra *All justice is broke to gain a
tóda léy.* crown.

Pléito, y orinál, llévan el *Lawyers and physicians send
hómbre al hospitál.* a man to the hospital.

- Piénsael ladrón, que tódos *The thief thinks all men like*
son de su condición. *him.*
- Pescadór de vára, mas có- *An angler eats more than he*
me que gáana. *gets.*
- Peléan los ladrónes, descú- *When thieves fall out, honest*
brense los húrtos. *men come by their goods,*
- Pérro ladradór, nunca *A barking dog never bites.*
buén mordedór.
- Pára amór, ni muérte, no *No house is strong enough to*
hái casa fuérte. *keep out love and death.*
- Páños lúcen en palácio, *Fine cloaths are regarded at*
que no híjos dálgo. *court, and not gentility.*
- Palábras de sánto, y úñas *To talk like a saint, and claw*
de gáato. *like a cat.*
- Pága lo que débes, sabrás *Pay your debts, and you'll*
lo que tiénes. *know what you are worth.*
- Panadéra éras ántes, y *Formerly you was a baker,*
aora tráhes guántes. *and now you wear gloves.*
- Quién à tódos crée, yér- *He who believes all men is*
ra; quién à ningúno, *in the wrong, and he who*
no aciérrta. *believes none is not in the*
right.
- Quién no álza un alfilér, *He that will not take up a*
no estíma à su mugér. *pin, does not value his wife.*
- Quién fía, ò prométe, en *He that is bound for ano-*
déuda se méte, *ther, or makes a promise,*
contracts a debt.
- Quién dá lo súyo ántes de *He who gives away what*
morír, apárejase à bien *he has before he dies, must*
sufrír. *prepare to endure much.*
- Quién há criádos, há ene- *He who has servants, has*
migos no escusádos. *unavoidable enemies.*
- Quién no tuviére que ha- *He who wants something to*
cér, árme navío, ò tóme *do, may fit out a ship, or*
mugér. *marry a wife.*
- Quién póco tiéne, y ésto *He who has little, and gives*
dá, préstó se arrepentirá. *it away, will soon repent.*
- Quién à la rapósa há de *He that will deceive the fox*
engañár, cúmplele ma- *must rise betimes.*
- drugar. Quién

Quién tiénē quátro, y gáfta *He who gets four, and*
cínco, no ha menestér *spends five, has no need*
bolsíco. *of a purse.*

Quién ruín es en su tierra, *He that is base in his own*
ruín es en la ajéna. *country, is so in another.*

Quién lo féo áma, her- *He who loves that which is*
móso le paréce. *deformed, fancies it band-*
some.

Quién á su pérro quiére *He that will kill his dog*
matár, rábia le há de *must say he is mad.*
levantár.

Quién cóme la váca del *He who eats the king's cow,*
Réy, à cién áños pága *pays for the bones an*
los huéffos. *bundred years after.*

Quién te hácet la fiésta, *He that gives you a treat,*
que no te suéle hácer, ò *and did not use to do it,*
te quiére engañár, ò te *either designs to deceive,*
há menestér. *or stands in need of you.*

Quién de préstó deter- *He that resolves in haste,*
mína, de espácio se ar- *repents at leisure.*
reiénte.

Quién léngua há, à Róma *He who has languages may*
vá. *travel to Rome.*

Quién bién quiére à Bel- *Love me, and love my dog.*
tran, bién quiére à su
can.

Quién al ciélo escúpe, en *He that spits at heaven, has*
la cára le cáe. *it fall in his face.*

Quién léxos se vá à casár, *He who goes far to be mar-*
ò vá engañado, ò vá à *ried, either is deceived,*
engañár. *or goes to deceive.*

Quién siémbra en el ca- *He that sows in the bigg-*
míno, cánsa los buéyes *ways, tires his oxen, and*
y piérde el trigo. *loses his corn.*

Quiéres que te síga el can, *If you would have the dog*
dále pan. *follow you, give him bread.*

Quién se cása por amóres, *They that marry for love,*
málos días, y buénas *have bad days, and good*
nóches. *nights.*

Quién

- Quién** pobreza tién, de *He that is poor is despised by his kindred, and he that is rich is a kin to every body, though he be not.*
- Quando** el costário promete missas, y céra, con mal ánda la galéra. *When the pyrate makes vows to heaven, his vessel is in a bad pligt.*
- Quando** el hiérro está encendido, entonces há de ser batido. *You must strike whilst the iron is hot.*
- Quando** el villano está en el mulo, no conóce à diós, ni al mundo. *Set a beggar a horse-back, and he will ride to the devil.*
- Quando** el hómbre méa las bótas, no es bueno para las mózas. *When a man bepisses his boots, he is not fit for young women.*
- Quando** el diablo réza, engañarte quíere. *When the fox preaches, take heed of the geese.*
- Qual** el duéño, tal el pérro. *Like master, like man.*
- Riñen las commádres, descúbrense las verdádes. *When gossips quarrel, the truth comes out.*
- Ratón que no sábe mas de un horádo, présto le cóge el gáto. *The cat soon catches the mouse that knows but one hole.*
- Súfre por sabér, y trabája por tenér. *Have patience to learn, and take pains to be rich.*
- Si tenéis la cabéza de vídrio, no os toméis à pedrádas conmigo. *If you have a glass bead, do not pretend to throw stones at me.*
- Sientate en tu lugár, no te harán levantár. *Sit in your own place, and you will not be forced to rise.*
- Si el nécio no fuésse al mercado, no se vendría lo málo. *If fools did not go to market, that which is nought would not be sold.*
- Si quiéres aprender à orár, éntre en la mar. *If you would learn to pray, go to sea.*
- Si te dá el pobre, es pór que mas tóme. *If a poor man gives, it is in hopes to receive more.*

Si

Si quiéres vivir sano, házte If you would be healthy, be
viéjo tempráno. old betimes.

Sé mózo bién mandádo, Be a diligent servant, and you
y comerás con tu amo. will eat with your master.

Salió del lodo, y entró en He leaped out of the frying-
el arróyo. pan into the fire.

Tópanse los hómbres, y Men meet, but mountains
no los móntes. do not.

Tódos los duélos, con pan Fat sorrows are better than
son ménos. lean.

'Una golondrina no hace One swallow makes no sum-
veráno. mer.

Viéjo amadór, inviérno An amorous old man is like
con flór. flowers in winter.

Vendér miél al colmené- To sell boney to bim that
ro. keeps hives ; that is, to
carry coals to Newcastle.

Vánse los amóres, y qué- Love goes off, but the sting
dan los dolóres. of it remains.

Vánse los gátos, y estién- When the cat's away, the
dense los rátos. mice play.

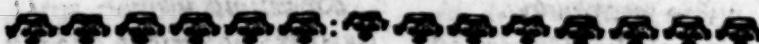
Yérba mála, no la empéce The frost does not binder the
la heláda. growth of weeds ; that is,
ill weeds grow apace.

Yantár tárde, y cenár cé- A late dinner, and an early
do, sacan la merienda supper, save an after-
de en medio. noon's luncheon.

Zorrilla que mucho tárda, The fox that stays out long,
caza aguárda. waits for a prey.

Zorrilla tagarnilléra, há- The subile fox counterfeits
cese muérta por asír being dead, to lay bold of
présa. the prey.

Por dó fálta la cábra, fál- Where the goat leaps, the
ta la que la máma. kid follows ; that is, cat
after kind.



Nombres propios de Hombres y Mugéres.

Proper Names of Men and Women.

A Mbrósio, <i>Ambrose.</i>	Fernándo, <i>Ferdinand.</i>
Andrés, <i>Andrew.</i>	Juán, <i>John.</i>
Augustín, <i>Augustin.</i>	Lorénzo, <i>Lawrence.</i>
Bartholomé, <i>Bartholomew.</i>	Luís, <i>Lewis.</i>
Beníto, <i>Benedict.</i>	Lúcas, <i>Luke.</i>
Bernárdo, <i>Bernard.</i>	Lucía, <i>Lucy.</i>
Catarína, <i>Catherine.</i>	Márcos, <i>Mark.</i>
Cecília, <i>Cecily.</i>	Martín, <i>Martin.</i>
Susána, <i>Susan.</i>	Mathías, <i>Mattbias.</i>
Chrisóstomo, <i>Chrysostom.</i>	Nicolás, <i>Nicholas.</i>
Christóval, <i>Christopher.</i>	Páblo, <i>Paul.</i>
Cárlos, <i>Charles.</i>	Philípe, <i>Philip.</i>
Domíngo, <i>Dominick.</i>	Margaríta, <i>Margaret.</i>
Estévan, <i>Stepben.</i>	Sebastián, <i>Sebastian.</i>
Francisco, <i>Francis.</i>	Simón, <i>Simon.</i>
Guillérmo, <i>William.</i>	Thomás, <i>Thomas.</i>
Jerónimo, <i>Jerome.</i>	Isabel, <i>Elizabeth.</i>
Jorge, <i>George.</i>	María, <i>Mary.</i>
Diégo, <i>James.</i>	'Ana, <i>Anne.</i>
Henríque, <i>Henry.</i>	Joséph, <i>Joseph.</i>

Vérbos tocantes á las Personas de Hombres, y
Mugéres.Verbs relating to the Persons of Men and Wo-
men.

Andár, <i>to go.</i>
Corré, <i>to run.</i>
Saltár, <i>to leap.</i>
Danzár, } <i>to dance.</i>
báilar, } <i>to dance.</i>

Comér, <i>to eat.</i>
Bebér, <i>to drink.</i>
Hartárse, <i>to gorge.</i>
Ayunár, <i>to fast.</i>
Chupár, <i>to suck.</i>
Mascár,

Mascár, to chew.	Jugár, to play.
Tragár, to swallow.	Trabajár, to work.
Rascár, to scratch.	Escribir, to write.
Espulgár, to pick fleas.	Holgár, to be idle.
Acostársese, to go to bed.	Leér, to read.
Dormír, to sleep.	Despertár, to awake.
Levantársese, to rise.	Huir, to run away.
Vestírsese, to put on one's cloaths.	Braveár, to boast.
Tocársese, a woman to dress her bead.	Alabár, to praise.
Hacérse la bárba, to trim.	Despreciár, to despise.
Bostezár, to yaun.	Soltár, to let go.
Velár, to watch.	Abrazár, to embrace.
Calzárse los zapátos, to put on shoes.	Atacár, to lace.
Calzárse las médias, to put on stockings.	Abotonár, to button.
Enfermár, to grow sick.	Ilamár, to call.
Curár, to cure.	Rezárl, to pray.
Herír, to wound.	Predicár, to preach.
Matár, to kill.	Obedecér, to obey.
Emborrachár, } to make drunk.	Mandár, to command.
embeodár, } drunk.	Gobernár, to govern.
	Parírl, to bring forth.
	Bezárl, to kiss.
	Hacér testamento, to make a will.



Phrases Familiáres.

Familiar Phrases.

TEngo mucho sueño, Despertád, *Awake.*
I am very sleepy. Dormís demasiádo, *You*
 Dexádmel dormír, *Let me* sleep too much.
Sleep. Levantáos préstos, *Rise*.
 Dormís? *Are you asleep?* quickly.
 Estáis aún en la cama? Porqué no os dáis priéssa?
Are you in bed still? Why do you not make haste?
 Estáis

- Estáis levantado? Are you up?
Queréis salsa? Will you have sauce?
- Cuidado no os resfriéis, Con sal me contento, I am satisfied with salt.
Take care you do not get cold.
- Vestíos, Put on your cloaths.
Lavad las manos, Wash your bands.
- Peinad la cabéza, Comb your head.
Atacádme, Lace me.
- Ayudáme, Help me.
Calzádme, Put on my shoes and stockings.
- Havéis rezado? Have you said your prayers?
Adónde están mis horas? Where is my prayer-book?
- Queréis almorcár? Will you breakfast?
Decídme lo que queréis, Tell me what you will have.
- Unos huévos, Some eggs.
Una xícara de chocolate, A dish of chocolate.
- Eshóra de comér, It is dinner time.
Sentáos à la mesa, Sit down to table.
- No téngo servilléta, ni cuchillo, ni tenedór, I have no napkin, nor knife, nor fork.
- Esta ólla está bien guisada, This soup is very well made.
- No cómo carne górdia, I eat no fat meat.
- Porqué no coméis? Why do you not eat?
Aquí está la pechuga de una polla, Here is the wing of a pullet.
- No coméis pan? Don't you eat bread?
Queréis bebér? Pedidlo. Will you drink? Call for it.
- Dádme un bocádo de queso, Give me a bit of cheese.
No hái fruta? Is there no fruit?
- Quitád los mantéles, Take off the table-cloth.
Juguémos à los náipes, Let us play at cards.
- Mas vale írnos al jardín, We had better go into the garden.
Háce mucho frío, y nos podrémos acatarrár, It is very cold, and we may get a cold.
- Háce calor y no es fano el andár à medio día, The weather is hot, and it is not wholesome to walk at noon.
Quedémonos pués aquí, Then let us stay here.
- Durmámos la siéfta, Let us take an afternoon's nap.
Aquí

Aquí viéne fuláno, *Here comes such a one.*

Rogadle que éntre, *Desire him to come in.*

Que nuévas tráhe v. md.,
What news do you bring.

No hái cósa de nuévo,
There is nothing new.

Cíerto que hái muchas no-
vedádes, *Indeed there is much news.*

Contádnos algúna cósa,
Tell us something.

Dícen que el cónde de N.
se há casádo, *They say the earl of N. is married.*

Que se cáse, ó se déxe de
casár, que nos importa?
Whether he marries or marries not, what does it concern us?

Hái aviso que el duque de
N. se ha muerto, *There is advice that the duke of N. is dead.*

Mas quiéro que se muerán
séis dúques, que morí-
me yó, *I had rather six dukes should die than die myself.*

Si no hacéis caso de mis
nuévas, que queréis que
os díga? *If you do not regard my news, what would you have me say to you?*

Morírse éste, ó casárse el
otro, cósa es que cada
día sucede, y la repub-

lica poco gána, ó piérde en éllo, *For one man to die and another to be married is what happens every day, and the publick neither gains nor loses much by it.*

Múchos son de parecer
que havrá guerra, *Many are of opinion that there will be a war.*

Otros porfian que ha de
havér paz, *Others affirm there will be peace.*

Los coſſarios de Argél há-
cen mucho dáño, *The Algier rovers do much mischief.*

Pués los de Túnes y Tripoli
no están ociosos, *Those of Tunis and Tripoli are not idle.*

Conocéis aquélla dáma?
Do you know that lady?

Bién la conósco, es míi
hermosa, *I know her very well, she is a great beauty.*

Míi modesta, y míi dis-
creta, *Very modest, and very discreet.*

Tiéne gran dóte, *She has a great portion.*

Su madre siémpre la acom-
páña, *Her mother is always with her.*

La hija es míi obediente,
The daughter is very obedient.

Y la

- Y la madre bien lo merece, *And the mother deserves it.* Que nos importa, *What is that to us.*
- Pues su hijo es bizárro caballero, *Then her son is a fine gentleman.* Vámos á la plaza, *Let us go to the square.*
- Ha servido con reputación en la guerra, *He has served in the war with reputation.* Que harémos allá? *What shall we do there?*
- Además, es hombre de letras, *Besides he is a man of learning.* Son las quátro, *Four o'clock.*
- Muy cortés, *Very courteous.* No puede ser, *It cannot be.*
- Nada fanfarrón, *Nothing given to boasting.* Por mi reloj así es, *It is so by my watch.*
- Por su valor ha medrado, *He has been preferred for his valour.* Por el sol no falta un cuarto, *It does not want a quarter by the sun.*
- Es Coronel de un tercio, *He is colonel of a regiment.* Aún es temprano para salir de casa, *It is too early to go abroad yet.*
- Véis aquél que pasa? *Do you see him that goes by?* Mas vale andar de día, *It is better to walk by day than by night.*
- Quién es? *Who is he?* De noche todos los gatos son pardos, *At night all cats are gray.*
- Es todo lo contrario del otro, *He is just the reverse of the other.* Múchos robos se cometen de noche, *Many robberies are committed in the night.*
- Cómo así? *How so?* Siéndolo tantos, quién se habrá de atrevér? *Being so many, who will dare to attempt us?*
- Es un miserable, *He is a wretched fellow.* La noche es muy fría, *The night is very cold.*
- Cobarde en extremo, *A great coward.* Hagámos buena lumbre, *Let us make a good fire.*
- Sumamente ignorante, *Surprisingly ignorant.* Trahéed
- Desvergonzado, *Impudent.*
- Echadór de bravatas, *Always bullying.*

- Trahéd carbón, Bring coals. Lástima es que se imprí-
man tales disparátes, It
Echád léña, Lay on wood. is pity that such fopperies
Cerrád éssa puerta, Shut should be printed.
that door.
- Leámos un rato, Let us La emprénta hácé mucho
read a while. bien, y mucho mal,
Printing does much good,
Que libros son éstos? and much harm.
What books are these?
- Tódos son de entreteni- Adónde hái buén gobiér-
miento, They are all of no nodebiéra hacér mal,
diversion. Where the government is
good it should do no harm.
- No gusto de novélas, I do Adónde se hállea ésse buen
not like novels. gobierno? Where is that
Ahí hái Comedias, There good government to be
are plays. found?
- Si son buénas se puéden En tódas pártes hái su lenguía de mal camino,
leér, If they are good There is something amis
they may be read. every where.
- Son de los mejóres poétas, No hái cosa perfecta en
They are writ by the éste mundo, Nothing is
best poets. perfect in this world.
- Mejór es história, History Dexémonos de cuéntos, y
is better. no jusguémos, Let us
Pués que os paréce de viages? What do you leave off stories, and not
think of voyages? judge.
- Nos dan a conocér tódo Merendémos, Let's eat
el mundo, sin salir de nuestra patria, They our afternoon's luncheon.
make us acquainted with 'Esso es de niños, That is
all the world, without like cbildren.
going out of our native country. Mózos sómos, comámos
miéntras podemos, We
Aveces nos llénan la ca- are young, let's eat
béza de mentíras, Some- whilst we can.
times they fill our beads Passeémonos un rato, Let
with lies. us walk a little.
- Lo mismo hácen las histó- El aire es templado, The
rias, Histories do the same. air is temperate.

- Volvámos à la ciudád, Y sóbre todo la señóra,
Let us return to the city. And the lady above all.
- Linda cálle es ésta, This Mui obligáda les estói, I
is a fine street. am much obliged to you.
- Las tiendas son hermósas, Adónde hái mérito, no
The shops are beautiful. hái obligación, Where
 Mirád la pómpa de aquel *there is merit, there is no*
 tendéro, See how stately *obligation.*
that shop-keeper is.
- Bién sobérbios son muchos, Many are very
proud.
- En teniéndo dinéro se ensanchan, When they
have got money they grow baughty.
- Aquella tendéra paréce una condésa, That female
shop-keeper, looks like a countess.
- Comprémos algúna cósa, Ni el querrá deshacerse de
Let us buy something. tal alája, ni hái precio
 Que gústan vuéstras mercedes? What will you
please to have?
- Una tabaquéra curiosa, Aquí viene mi marido,
A curious snuff box. *Here comes my husband.*
- Tixeras de Francia, Dichoso es el, *He is a*
French scizars. *happy man.*
- Hevillas de las mejóres, Havéis mostrado à éstos
Some of the best buckles. señores lo que les agrada?
 Aquí náda fálta, Here is Have you shown
no want of any thing. these gentlemen what they
 Vuestras mercedes véan lo que les agráda, Gentlemen,
see what pleases you. *what please them?*
- Todo nos paréce bién, We like all.

Tódo

- Tódo aquí nos conténta, De mirár un demónio,
All bere pleases us. después de haver visto
 'Esso es lo que deseo, That un Angel, *To look upon*
is what I wifb. *a devil after having seen*
 Múi venturoso sóis, You *an angel.*
are very fortunate.
- No me puédo quexár de De mirár un demónio,
 mi suérte, *I cannot com-*
plain of my lot. después de haver visto
 El mismo váya con vue- un Angel, *To look upon*
 stras mercédes, *God go* *a devil after having seen*
with you. *an angel.*
- Acá volverémos por lo Tan fea cómo es, presu-
 que se ofreciére, *We me de si, As ugly as she*
shall return bither for is, she has a conceit of
what we want. *herself.*
- Serán servidos con tóda Passémos, que no puédo
 estimación, *You shall be tolerárla, Let us pass by,*
served with all respect. *for I cannot endure her.*
- Havéis visto mas bélла El Rey viéne, Diós le
 criatúra? *Did you ever guárde, The king is com-*
see a more charming ing, God bless him.
- creature?
- Paréce que os há enamorado, Parémonos aquí, *Let us*
soberána, Our sovereign
love with her. stand here.
- Mi amór es casto, *My Quién viéne en el cóche*
love is chaste. con su magestád? *Who*
 Su preséncia lo meréce, *is in the coach with his*
Her presence deserves it. *majesty?*
- Aqui tenéis ótro estrémo, La Reyna nuestra señóra
Here you have the con- soberána, *Our sovereign*
trary extreme. lady the queen.
- Diós nos libre, God deli- Los otros dos personáges,
ver us. *The other two great per-*
 De que os asustáis? What sons.
- What are you frightened at?* El caballerizo mayór,
The master of the borse.
- Y el gran tesorero, And the big treasurer.
- En el primér cóche quién Los gentiles hombres,
 hái? *Who is in the first*
coach?
- Las libreras son mui ricas, The gentlemen ushers.
- Las libreras son mui ricas, The liveries are very rich.

- Las guárdas son vistósas, *The guards are a very fine sight.* No señalan los tribútos ? *Do not they set the Taxes?*
- Adónde va su magestád ? *Whither is his majesty going ?* También esto les tóca, *That also belongs to them.*
- A la comédia, *To the play.* No lo rehúsan a véces ? *Do not they refuse it sometimes.*
- Pues lo sabéis, decidme álgo de la corte, *Since you know it, tell me something of the court.* Los Españosles son muy leáles, *The Spaniards are very loyal.*
- Las córtes tódas se parécen, *All courts resemble one another.* No respondéis á mi pregúnta, *You do not answer my question.*
- Peró el gobierno de España cómo es ? *But how is the government of Spain ?* Paréceme que si, *I think I do.*
- El Rey es absoluto, *The king is absolute.* Cómo así ? *How so ?*
- Que son las Cortes ? *What are the Cortes ?* Porque siendo tan leales, le dan á su Rey lo que pide, *Because being so loyal, they give the king what he asks.*
- Los procuradóres del Reíno, *The representatives of the kingdom.* Y el Rey no píde mas de lo que há menestér, *And the king asks no more than he wants.*
- Tiénen podér sóbre el Rey ? *Have they any power above the king ?* Dichoso Rey, y dichosa gente, *an happy king, and an happy people.*
- El Rey de España no conóce superior, *The king of Spain owns no superior.* Contádme las grandezas de España, *Tell me what relates to the grandeur of Spain.*
- De que sírvan las Cortes ? *What is the use of the Cortes ?* Hái en España doce Reínos, ó provincias grandes, *There are in Spain twelve kingdoms, or large provinces.*
- De representár las necesidádes del Reíno, *To represent the wants of the kingdom.*

Quáles

Quáles son? Which are they?

Castilla, (Castile,) Leon, Aragón, Navarra, (Navarre) Cataluña (Catalonia) Galicia, Valéncia, Murcia, Biscaya, (Biscay) Granada, Andaluzía, Estremadúra.

Estas contienen diez y seis mil, y setecientas villas, These contain 16700 towns.

Once Arzobispados, 11 archbishopricks.

Quarénta y ócho Opispados, 48 bishopricks.

Quince Universidádes, 15 universities.

Les réntas reáles móntan tréinta millones de ducádos, The king's revenue amounts to 30 millions of ducats.

La rénta de los susodichos arzobispados y opispados, dos millones de ducádos, The revenues of the aforesaid archbishopricks and bishopricks are two millions of ducats.

Las prebendas, paróchias, y otros beneficios otro tanto, The prebends, parishes, and other benefices as much more.

Convéntos se cuéntan mas de nueve mil, The mo-

nasteries are reckoned to be above 9000.

Las personas religiosas setenta mil, The religious persons 70000.

Las haciendas de los Dúques que son Grandes de Espáña se estiman en un millón nuevecientos y noventa mil ducádos, The estates of the dukes that are Grandees 1990000 ducats.

Las de los Marquéses Grandes trecientos y cinquenta mil, Those of the marquesses Grandees at 350000.

Las de los Condes Grandes trecientos y cinquenta mil, Those of the earls, Grandees 350000.

Las de los Dúques, Marquéses, y Cónedes, que no son Grandes, tres millones ciénto y cinquenta mil, Those of the dukes, marquesses, and earls who are not Grandees three millions 150000.

Todo ésto en Espáña, All this in Spain.

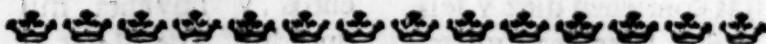
Los dominios de las Indias son immensos, The dominions in the Indies are immense.

Su thesóro enriquece à todo el mundo, *Its treasures enrich all the world.*

Recojámonos pára tratár dessas cósas, que gusto mucho déllas, *Let us*

go home to talk of these affairs, for I am much delighted with them.

Vámos que se lléga la noche, *Let us go, for night draws on.*



Colóquio Primero en úna Hostelería.

First discourse in an Inn.

A. Díos séa en ésta cá-
sa. Olá, quien
hái allá dentro?

B. En hora buéna venga
v. m.

A. Sóis vos el huespéd?
B. Sói el mózo, y criá-
do de cása, para servir
à los huespedes honrá-
dos como v. m.

A. Seré yó bién hospe-
dádo aquí ésta noche?

B. Si señor, v. m. será
mui bien tratádo, y no
le faltará cosa que ape-
téscala.

A. Cómo se lláma el hué-
sped?

B. Llámase Guillermo el
Buéno.

A. Quiéra Diós que tal
le halle. Quál es la en-
séña de su cása?

A. G O D be in this
house. Hoy, who
is there within?

B. Sir, you are very wel-
come.

A. Are you the landlord?
B. I am the man, and ser-
vant of the house, to
serve such worthy guests
as you, Sir.

A. Shall I be well enter-
tained here to night?

B. Yes, Sir, you will be
very well treated, and
shall want for nothing
you can desire.

A. What is my landlord's
name?

B. His name is William
Good.

A. God grant I may find
him such. What sign has
be to his house?

B. Mejór

- B. Mejór no le hallará v. m. en ninguna parte. La enseña es la justicia.
- A. Buén huésped en casa, y la justicia à la puerta, no hái mas que desear, finó es que seáis vos confórme a lo demás.
- B. V. m. díga de mi lo que la experiencia le enseñare ; que no es de hómbres honrados labárse à si próprios.
- A. Ea pués, llevad mi caballo a lo caballeriza, dadle hárta pája, y no le quitéis luégo la silla, que viéne fudado.
- B. Manda v. m. que le lléve al río a beber, o que le dé agua en la caballeriza?
- A. Dexadle primero refrescár, y después dadle el agua, no le de toro-zón el bebér estando tan caliente.
- B. V. m. es servido que le quite las bótas, y le tráhiga únos pantúflos ?
- A. Bién dices, trahédlos ; porqué he perdido mis zapatos en el camino. Trahédme tambien úna escobilla pára limpiar el vestido, y agua
- B. You will not find a better any where. The sign is Justice.
- A. A good landlord in the house, and justice at the door, there is nothing else to be desir'd, but that you be suitable to the rest.
- B. Sir, You may speak of me as you shall find by experience ; for it is not the part of honest men to commend themselves.
- A. Well then, lead my horse to the stable, litter him well, and take not off his saddle presently, because he is hot.
- B. Do you please I shall lead him to the river to drink, or that I give him water in the stable.
- A. Let him cool first, and then give him his water, lest he should have the gripes by drinking when he is hot.
- B. Does it please you, Sir, that I draw off your boots, and bring you a pair of slippers.
- A. You are in the right ; bring them, for I have lost my shoes by the way. Bring me also a brush to clean my cloaths, and water to cool my hands,

- pára refrescárme las má-
nos y la boca, y quitár
todo éste pólvo. and mouth, and get rid
of all this dust.
- B.** Aquí tiene v. m. tódo
lo que píde ; descánse,
y míre si quiere cenár
sólo, o con lós ótros
huéspedes.
- A.** Mas vale cenár adón-
de hai conversación
que sólo, y en cenando
me acostaré, que véngo
cansado, y quíero des-
canlár.
- B.** Muí bien hará v. m.
peró con ayuda de un
traguito de víno, se
duérme mejor.
- A.** No es malo él consé-
jo, yó me acomódo
con el ; Vámos pués, si
es hora.
- B.** Tódo está aparejado, **B.** All is ready, and they
only wait for you, Sir.
y sólo espéran a v. m.
- A.** Pués yó vói, que no
es razón hacér desco-
modidád à los demás ;
y pára decir la verdád,
me hállo bien dispuésto
pára comér ; que la
hambre empiéza à pi-
cár. Múcho me alégro,
Señores, de hallár tan
buéna compañía, v. m.
se sírvan de sentárse.
- C.** En tomándo v. m. su
assiento, nos irémos tó-
dos acomodándo.
- B.** Here is all you ask for,
Sir, rest your self, and
consider whether you
will sup alone, or with
the other guests.
- A.** It is better to sup with
company, than alone,
and when I have supped,
I will go to bed, for I
am weary, and will rest
me.
- B.** You will do very well,
Sir, but with the help of
a little wine, a man sleeps
better.
- A.** Your advice is not amiss,
it fits me ; let us go then,
if it is time.
- B.** All is ready, and they
only wait for you, Sir.
- A.** I go then, for it is not
reasonable to incommodate
the rest ; and to say the
truth, I find my self well
disposed to eat, for hun-
ger begins to pinch. Gentlemen,
I am very glad to find such good com-
pany, be pleased to sit
down.
- C.** Sir, when you are seat-
ed, we will all place our
selves.

A. Múcho

- A.** Múcho me hónran v^t. A. *You honour me much, Gentlemen, I am very well here; let us not waste time in compliments, for the supper cold, is not good.*
- D.** Pues éste Caballéro lo manda, obedescámos. D. *Since this gentleman commands it, let us obey. Here is no need of carvers, it is better for every one to lay hold of what be likes, and let us eat now, for we shall have time to talk as much as is requisite afterwards.*
- A.** 'Esto es lo que à mi me conviéne, por haber hécho jornada larga, y comido pocó. A. *That suits me very well, because I have made a long journey, and eaten little.*
- E.** Mózo, dáme de bebér, para aguzár el apetito. E. *Waiter, give me drink to sharpen my appetite.*
- B.** V. m. me díga lo que gústa de bebér. B. *Sir, you will tell me what you please to drink.*
- E.** Dáme un buen trágó de vino de Fráncia, que es el mejor à mi gústo. E. *Give me a good glass of French wine, which is the best in my opinion.*
- A.** A mi, un buen vásó de cervéza, que téngo sed, y es buena pára matárla. A. *Give me a good cup of beer, for I am thirsty, and that is good to quench it.*
- D.** Si tenéis buena cídra, por principio de céna me agráda mas que otra bebida. D. *If you have good cyder, I like it better than any other liquor to begin with at supper.*
- C.** Pues pára mi, el vino del Rhin es el mayór regalo, si es verdadéro. C. *For me, Rhenish wine is most delicious, if it be right.*

E. Dícen,

330 A New SPANISH Grammar.

- E. Dícen, que el vino de Canárias es pára mugeres, peró à mi gústo, no hai ninguno que se le iguale.
- A. El vino en generál es mejor que quántas cósas han inventado los hombres pára paladeárse, o ántes pára destruírse.
- C. Los que excéden dela templanza, para destruírse lo gaftan; peró con moderación todos los liquores se puéden tomár.
- D. Si la gente se gobernará como débe, todas las cósas crió Diós para servicio del género humano, y vémos el exceso que hái en tódas.
- E. Han dádo en abrasfarse las entráñas con aguardiente de mil géneros, y las mugéres en hartárse de téa hásta que no les cábe.
- F. En ésta cása no falta náda, que se puéda apetecer pára comér, o bebér regaladamente.
- A. Bién se écha de ver por lo que aquí tenémos presente, y será bién no cometámos las
- E. *They say Canary is for women, but for my palate none is to compare to it.*
- A. *Wine in general is better than all other things, men have invented to please their palates, or rather to destroy themselves.*
- C. *Those who exceed temperance, waste it to destroy themselves; but with moderation, all liquors may be used.*
- D. *If people would govern themselves as they ought, God created all things for the service of humane race, yet we see the excess there is in all.*
- E. *They are fallen into a way of burning out their bowels with a thousand sorts of strong waters, and the women of filling themselves with tea, till they cannot hold it.*
- F. *There is nothing wanting in this house, that can be desired to eat and drink daintily.*
- A. *That is visible in what we have here before us, and it will be convenient that we do not commit culpas*

- culpas que condenámos
en otros. *the faults we blame in others.*
- C. Que hora es, pára que
nos acostémos tan pré-
stó, teniendo ocasión
de divertírnos. ? *What a clock is it, that we should go to bed so hastily, when we can divert ourselves?*
- B. Han dádo las doce. *It has struck twelve.*
- C. El tiempo no se siénte
en buena conversación. *Time slips away in good Company.*
- D. Bueno será retirarnos,
que también la gente
de casa ha de descansar. *It will be well for us to withdraw, for the people of the house must rest too.*
- E. Muí buenas nôches les
dé Diós à vuestras mer-
cedes. *God give you a very good night, Gentlemen.*
- A. Venid vos conmigo, mózo? *Do you come along with me, waiter?*
- B. Aquí estói pára servir à su mercéd. *I am here at your service, Sir.*
- A. Ayudádmel a desnudar. *Help to undress me.*
- B. Aquí está la servilleta pára el bonete. *Here is the napkin for a cap.*
- A. Está bien enjúta, y las sávanas lo están? mirad no me matéis con ropa húmeda. *Is it very dry, and are the sheets so? Take heed you do not kill me with damp linnen.*
- B. Mi áma es mui cuidadosa en éste particular, es mugér de conciencia, y no quiere que padéscan los huéspedes, por su descuido. *My mistress is very careful in that particular, she is a conscientious woman, and will not have her guests suffer through her negligence.*
- A. Pócas hái tan cuidadosas de sus huéspedes, o de sus almas; las mas como cóbren el dinéro, *Few take such care of their guests, or of their own souls, most of them, so they get the no*

no se acuerdan de otra cosa. money, think of nothing else.

B. V. M. gústa que le sirva en otra cosa? Does it please you, Sir, I should serve you any farther?

A. Por ahóra no me salta mas que dormir, y el suéño se va acercando. A. At present I only want to sleep, and I find it coming upon me.

B. Diós se le dé a v. m. descansado. B. God grant you very good rest, Sir.



Colóquios Espanóles è Ingléses. Spanish and English Colloquies.

Coloquio segundo,

Entre dos Caminantes, llamados Don Juan, y Don Ricardo; interviniendo a veces sus dos Criados, y un Huesped.

COLLOQUY II.

Between two Travellers, called Mr John, and Mr Richard; their two Servants, and an Host, sometimes putting in a word.

D. J. Alido hémos al fin de Sevilla. WE are at length got out of Sevil.

D. R. Hártome pésa à mi de la salida, pero es fuerza hacer de la necesidad virtud; que quién mas no puede, morir se déxa.

Mr R. This parting troubles me sufficiently, but it is requisite to make virtue of necessity; for when a man can do no more, he must submit to dye.

D. J. Que havéis dexado atrás que tanto os aflige su ausencia?

Mr J. What have you left behind, that you are so much grieved at its absence?

D. R.

D. R. No he dexádo ménos, que el corazón, y el alma ; que há días, que están en podér de cierta dama.

Mr R. I have left no less than my heart, and soul, which have been for some time past at the disposal of a certain lady.

J. Dexádla, pués ella se quédá quiéta en su casa, y rogará a Diós por nosotros, que nos vamos cansando por éste camino.

J. Do not mind her, since she is at ease in her house, and will pray to God for us, who are tiring ourselves upon our journey.

R. Podré yó decíros lo que díxo un amigo, à quién se le avía muerto un niño, que consolándole algunos con decir, tendría quien rogasé por el en el cielo, respondió ; no se si tendrá tanta habilidád.

R. I may say to you, as a friend did, whose young child was newly dead, when some comforted him, saying, he would have one to pray for him in heaven, and he answered ; I know not whether he is capable of it.

J. Mejór podréis decir lo que díxo el otro llevando à su mugér à enterrár ; que preguntándole cómo no íba con ella en el entierro, respondió, Vaya- se esta vez assi, que à otra yó sé lo que tengo de hacer.

J. You had better say as another did, who when his wife was buried, being asked why he did not go with the burial, answered, let her go so for this time, I know what I have to do in the next.

R. Dexémos grácias, que no puédo tan presto olvidár à quién túve tanta voluntad.

R. Let us leave jesting, for I cannot so soon forget a person I so entirely loved.

J. No sé, si me aventure à decir, que en ésta dama tuvisteis mal gusto.

J. I know not whether I may venture to say, that you had no good fancy in the lady.

R. Porque ?

R. Why ?

J. Porqué es mui gorda.

J. Because she is very fat.

R. Contra gusto, no
hai dispûta. Quânto y
mas, que la muger górdia
es fréscâ en el verano, y
en el invierno tiene con
que abrigarse un hombre,
y no huéflos que le hagan
mal.

J. No nos metámos en
semejante dispûta; dexé-
mos à cada lóco con su
téma, y volvâmos à ha-
blâr de Sevilla, que désde
esta cuésta se divisa algú-
na parte de su grandéza,
que no es tan poca que no
se puéda decir mucho en
su alabanza.

R. La tórre es la que
se paréce.

J. Notable es su altu-
ra, y mas que puéden su-
bir hásta lo alto dêlla dos
persónas juntas à caballo.

R. Y la Girálida, * que
le falta si con cada viénto
se muda.

J. Esto yo lo jurára.

R. Diréis, que porqué
tiene nômbre de hembra.

R. There is no arguing
against tastes. Besides, a fat
woman is cool in summer,
and keeps a man warm in
winter, and is not all bones
to bruise him.

J. Let us not enter upon
such a controversy; let us
leave every mad-man to his
own humour, and let us a-
gain talk of Sevil, for from
this bill, there is a view
of some part of its gran-
dour, which is not so incon-
siderable, but that much
may be said in praise of it.

R. It is the steeple that
appears.

J. The height of it is ve-
ry remarkable, and it is so
much more than two persons
together may ride up a
horse-back to the top of it.

R. And what can the
* Giralda want, if she
turns with every wind.

J. I would freely swear
it.

R. You mean, because
she bears a woman's name.

* Note, That this Girálida is the name of a vast Figure of a Woman, that stands on the top of the aforesaid great Steeple of Sevil, and serves for a Weather-cock, turning with the Wind, and is called Girálida for Giradla: and this from Girár, to turn about with the Wind.

J. Y ésto no básta? Pe-
ró volvámos à nuestro
téma.

R. Esta tórra con las
dos hermánaas a los lados,
son armas de su santa i-
glésia.

J. Quién son las dos
hermánaas?

R. Santa Juſta, y Sán-
ta Rufina, Patronas désta
gran ciudád.

J. Siénto en el alma el
no haber visto en élla el
monuménto que hácen el
juéves Santo.

R. Es cosa peregrina
ésto, y las limosnas que
se dan esa semána.

J. Por ciérto, que la
Iglésia es sumtuosa.

R. Havéis notado las
muchas Capillas que tié-
ne, puertas, y Altáres?

J. No.

R. Pués páſſan de se-
ténta los Altáres que hái
ella; tiene tambien
nuéve puertas, y ochenta
vidriéras. La grandéza de
aquellas grádas es cosa
peregrina; y sin ésto, el
Arzobispo, Dignidades,
Canonigos, Racionerós,
Veintenéros, Capellánes,
Músicos, Sacristánes, Mó-
zos de chórro, Pertigué-
ros, y otros muchos;

J. And is not that suf-
ficient? But let us return to
our subject.

R. This tower, with
the two sisters on the sides
of it, are the arms of its
holy church.

J. Who are the two si-
sters?

R. St Juſta, and St Ru-
fina, the patronesses of this
great city.

J. It grieves me to the
beart that I have not seen
in it the sepulcre they make
on Maundy Thurſday.

R. That is very extra-
ordinary, as are the alms
which are given that week.

J. The church is cer-
tainly very sumptuous.

R. Have you observed
how many Chapels, Doors,
and Altars it has?

J. No.

R. Then, there are a-
bove seventy Altars in it;
it has also nine doors, and
eighty windows. The gran-
dour of the steps is extraordi-
nary, without mentioning the
Archbishop, Dignitaries, Ca-
nonons, Demy-Canons, Vi-
cars Chorals, Chaplains,
Musicians, Sacristans, Sing-
ing-boys, Vergers, and ma-
ny more; but what is a-
bove all the revenue only
sobre

sobre todo, pásse la rénta for repairs, is above fifty de sola su fábrica de cinco thousand Ducats. quenta mil Ducados.

J. La custodia, dicen, que es cosa admirable J. The tabernacle, they say, is a wonderful thing to vélla.

R. Es tan grande que la llévan en un carro. R. It is so big that it is carried in a cart.

J. Pues que tendrá de peso?

R. Mas de mil y trescientos marcos de plata, que hacen veinte y seis arróbas; de altura tres varas y media; y ésto, sin la cruz que lleva por remate, que es de una quarta; y el ancho de columna tiene cerca de dos varas.

R. Above a thousand three hundred marks of plate, which amount to six hundred weight and a half; the height three yards and a half, without including the cross on the top, which is a quarter of a yard long; and the breadth of it between the columns, is near two yards.

J. Sospécho que es una de las ciudades mas antiguas Sevilla, de quantas hái en España.

R. Mil setecientos y veinte y siete años, antes que Christo se encarnase, sand seven hundred and tuvo principio su antigua fundación. Pero dexando ésto, es sin número la riqueza que en si encierra, y la remota gente que en ella se halla.

J. Múchas cosas hái que asombran en ésta ciudad, como la Alcazara, el Real Alcazar, la Aduana, casa de la Moneda,

J. I fancy Sevil is one of the antientest cities in Spain.

R. The ancient foundation of it was laid a thousand years before the incarnation of Christ. Besides, the wealth it contains is immense, as is the number of remote nations that resort to it.

J. There are many things to be admired in this city, as the exchange of shops, the royal palace, the custom-house, the mint, the mera-

néda, Lónja de los mercaderes, la Cárcel, la Alhóndiga, su juridición con hórca y cuchillo, &c.

R. Sin esto, provée Sevilla de azéite à tódo el Réino, y las Indias.

J. Yo he oido decir, que muchos días se registran en la aduana mas de diez mil arrobas.

R. Hablár de sus bastimentos de pan, vino, carne, frutas, caza, y pescado, sería nunca acabár.

J. Las dos colunas que tiene, en la una puesta la figura de Hercules, primér fundadór desta gran ciudad; y en la otra Julio Cesar, que la ilustró con los muros, y cércas que la rodean, y quinze puertas en ellos que la engrandézen; son, por cierto, memorables.

R. Si mirámos en élo; que mayór grandéza que estos Caños de Carmóna, que fabricáron los Móros.

J. Pués havéis nombrado a Carmóna, decid algo d'ella, porqué yo no la hé visto mas que de pássio, y sé que dista seis léguas de Sevilla.

chants exchange, the goal, the granaries, its jurisdiction with power of life and death, &c.

R. Besides, Sevil furnishes the whole kingdom, and the West-Indies with oil.

J. I have heard it said, that several days, above ten thousand arrobas (that is 125 tun) are entered in the custom house.

R. It would be endless to talk of its provisions, of bread, wine, flesh, fruits, fowl, and fish.

J. The two pillars in it, with the figure of Hercules, the first founder of this great city on one of them; and on the other, that of Julius Cæsar, who adorned it with the walls, and works that encompass it, and fifteen gates in it that contribute to its grandeur, are very remarkable.

R. If we rightly consider it; what more grandeur than this Aqueduct of Carmona, which was built by the Moors.

J. Since you have named Carmona, give some account of it, for I have seen no more than in passing through, and know it is six leagues from Sevil.

338 A New SPANISH Grammar.

R. La ciudád de Carmóna está puésta en sitio na is seated on an eminence, eminente, con fuértes murallas, and has strong walls, with 118 torres, 118 towers on them, a so alcázar; regando sus beautiful palace, and its spadilatadas végas Cárbonas y ciosas meadows are watered Guadáña. Prodúce su territorio mucho pan, vino, Guadána. Its territory azéite, áves, frutas, hortalizas, ganados, y todo lo oil, fowl, fruit, herbs, catque es necesario para la tle, and all that is necessary vida humana. Tiene la fort for human life. The city ciudád tres mil vezinos, contains three thousand families, divided into seven parishes, con cinco convéntos de Frailes, otros tantos of men, and as many of tos de Mónjas, y buenos nuns, and good Hospitals. Hospitales.

J. No havéis oido haber de una famosa hechicera que dícen huvó un tiempo en Sevilla, y despues se passó à Carmóna? J. Have not you heard talk of a famous witch said to have lived sometime in Sevil, and to have removed thence to Carmona?

R. No sólo he oido hablar de ella, pero la conocí, y vi todos sus instrumentos, que no eran sino unas baratijas, por lo qual no creo en hechizos. R. I have not only heard talk of her, but I knew her, and saw all her tools, which were mere trumpery, and therefore I believe nothing of witchcraft.

J. Yo à la verdad creo que los hái; pero que los háya, o no los háya, decídme lo que sabéis de aquella vieja embustera. J. For my part I verily believe there is; but whether there is, or is not, tell me what you know of that cheating old woman.

R. Ella se aprovechaba de mil cosas, como son habas, verbena, piedra verbein, eagle's stone, a bad-del águila, pie de texón, ger's foot, a halter one bad-foga de ahorcado, grámos been banged in, the seed of

de helécho, espína de erizo, flor de yédra, huéflos de corazón de ciervo, ójos de lóba, unguéntos de agújas clavadas en zonas de cabritos, y bárbas de cabrón berméjo, séslos de asno, y redomilla de azéite pentino, sin otras invenciones de que no me acuerdo.

de helécho, espína de erízo, flor de yédra, huéflos de corazón de ciervo, ójos de lóba, unguéntos de agújas clavadas en coras de cabritos, sangre kids, blood and beard of a redish be-goat, brains of an ass, and a little vial of oil of serpents, besides other inventions which I cannot call to mind.

J. Y en que pararon todos éstos hechizos ? J. And what came of all these spells ?

R. En que la encorazaron, y à ella, y à otros diéz, les dieron trecientos azotes, tras lo qual me avisó à avisar que se iba à Antequera, que si quería la fuésie à ver, y que me llevaría en bo-

R. That she was carted, and she, and ten more, had three hundred lashes a-piece, after which, she sent me word she was going to Antequera, if I pleased I might go see her, or if not she would carry me through the air.

J. Fuéla à ver, o súpo que fin túvo ? J. Did you go see her, or did you hear what end she bad.

R. No la ví, que no me importaba el buscárla, ni pudo élla con todo su saber, hacerme bolár ; pero súpe que fué à Antequera, dónde la cogieron haciendo hilár un dazo, y echando únas habas, y le dieron otros doscientos azotes ; partió de allí à Málaga, adónde dió fin à su miserable vida.

R. I saw her not, for it did not concern me to look for her, nor could she with all her art make me fly ; but I heard she went to Antequera, where she was taken making a sievespin, and casting beans, and they gave her two hundred lashes more ; she set out from thence to Malaga, where she ended her wretched life.

Criado 1. Señores, no Serv. 1. Gentlemen, let se olvíden v^s. m^s. con la not your discourse make you conversación, que se va forget that the night draws llegando la noche, y si nos on, and if we should take up quedámos à la seña de la at the sign of the star (that estrella, la cámara será dura, is under the canopy of heaven) our bed will be hard, y la cena ligera. and our supper light.

J. La hambre débe de J. It is likely you are havér llegado, que la nó- hungry, for night is not so che no está tan cercána, near at hand, but the ad- peró el aviso no es pára vice is not amis. despreciár.

Criado 2. En verdád, Serv. 2. In truth, my señores míos, que mi ca- masters, my comrade is in the marada tiene razón, que right, for it is best to get in- lo mejor es llegar con día to the inn by daylight, to sup à la posada, cenar despá- at leisure, and go to bed be- cio, y acostárnos temprá- times, for these horses will no, pués éstos caballos nos tire us sufficiently, and get traherán harto molidos, us good stomachs, or digest y los estómagos bién ga- what we have eaten. stádos.

R. Pués tenéis párt en R. Since you partake in ella, no fabriáis aprove- it, could not you improve cháros de la conversación, upon the discourse, and not y no ponér tódo vuéstro set all your thoughts upon cuidado en comér y dor- eating and sleeping, which mír, que son las cosas en are things in common be- común éntre los brútos y tween beasts and men, los hómbres, siéndo la ra- whereas it is reason that di- zón la que nos dífferencia stinguishes us from them. déllos.

Criado 1. Señor mas Serv. 1. Sir, a rasber vále úna lónja de tozino of bacon is better for a man pára quién tiene hambre, that is hungry, and a soft y una cámara mullida pára bed for him that is tired, quién viéne cansado, que than all the reason in the tóda la razón del mundo; world; and reason itself

y la misma razón nos enseña que busquemos lo which necessity requires, and que requiere la necesidad, to maintain our bodies. y el sustentará nuestros cuerpos.

J. Ea, caminémos pués, J. Well, let us put on, aunque no sea por mas que tho' it be only to please our complacér à éstos mózos men, who seem to be hungry; que parece que van con and what is still worse, I hambre; y lo peor, que am afraid we have lost our temo havemos errado el way, and here is no body to camíno, y aquí no hái à enquire of. quién preguntará.

R. En quanto al camino, R. As for the way, I no, créo que vamos bien seguro; believe we are safe enough; gúeros; pero con todo, however, it will not be amiss bueno será preguntar, para to ask, for, if I mistake not, es, si no me engaño, allí I see a shepherd yonder. veo un pastór.

J. Lleguémonos allá à J. Let us go thither to preguntar.

R. Amigo, decídnos, R. Tell us friend, is this es éste el camino à Carmóna?

móna?

Pastór. Bien van v^s. m^s. Shep. You are right, el camino es derécho, no Gentlemen, the way is le pueden errar. straight, you cannot miss it.

J. Quanto camino nos J. How far have we yet quedá aun hasta la ciudad?

Pastór. Dos léguas y Shep. Two leagues and media, todo llano, sin subida ni baxada, tierra rasa, or descent, plain ground, y limpia. and fair.

R. Diós quede con vos, R. God be with you, amigo.

Pastór. Y váya con v^s. m^s. Shep. And go along with you, Gentlemen.

J. Bién podémos caminár de espácio, pués tenemos bastante día, y con viéne aliviár los cabállos, que han de caminár mañana.

Criádo 1. Yo le dói mi palábra a v. m. que ántes me máten que me quíten lo que llévo, que no me inclíno à passár la nóche en un camino muriéndo de hambre; pero, con todo, mas vále guardár lo que tenémos en paz, que no aventurár las vidas en defensa déllo, sin necesidad.

Serv. 1. I give you my word, Sir, they shall sooner kill me than take what I have from me, for I have no mind to lie all night, starving with hunger, upon the high-way; and yet it is better to save what we have in peace, than to hazard our lives in defence of it, without any need.

R. Bién has dicho, y yo créo que Diós nos ha librado de semejantes a- ventúras, pués hémos lle- gado à las puertas de la ciudád.

R. You say well, and I believe God has delivered us from any such adventures, for we are now at the city gates.

J. Apeémonos en éste albergue, que es úno de los mejóres.

J. Let us alight at this inn, which is one of the best.

R. Diós séa en ésta cá- fa.

R. God be in this house.

Huesped. V^s. m^r. séan muí bién venidos mis señ- óres.

Host. You are very welcome, my masters.

J. Tendrémos aquí todo lo necesario, Huesped? míre, que sómos personas que nos tratámos bien.

J. Shall we be furnished with all that is necessary, landlord? take notice, that we are men who make much of our selves.

Huesped. Quánto qui- siéren v^s. m^r. hallarán, à pedir de boca, cámás as- seádas y sábanas limpias.

Host. You will find every thing you would have bere, Gentlemen, ask and have neat beds, and clean sheets.

Criado 1. Si, peró pá- ra cenár, que la cama sin cena no hace buén suéño.

Serv. 1. Ay, but the supper, for a bed without supper, will not make one sleep sound.

R. Mirád vos por los cabállos, que téngan mûcha y buéna pája, buén héno, y buéna ceváda, o avéna, y dexád el cuidado de la cena, que en buénas manos quédá.

R. Do yo look to the borses, that they have plenty, and good straw, good oats, and take no care of do the supper, for that is in good bands.

J. Ahóra, huesped, que hái que comér?

J. Now, landlord, what is there to eat?

Huesped. Hái liébre, con néjos, perdices, póllos, póllas, capónes, gánsos, ánades, pavos, carnéro, váca, puérco, cabrítos; escojan mis Senóres.

Host. There is bare, rabbits, partridges, chickens, pullets, capons, geese, ducks, turkeys, mutton, beef, pork, kid; do you choose, Gentlemen.

R. Con un par de perdices, & una buena pólilla, havrá pára nosotros; pero pára los mózos será menester cosa de mas peso.

R. A couple of partridges, and a good pullet, will be enough for us; but our men must have something more substantial.

Huesped. Dexénlo v^s. a mi cuénta que yo procuraré agradár á ámos, y criádos.

Host. Leave it to me, Gentlemen, and I will endeavour to please both masters and servants.

J. Séa assí, háya bastante pára todos; y dándonos ahóra á probár de vuéstro vino, miéntras se la cena guísa.

J. Let it be so, provide enough for all; and now let us have a taste of your wine, whilst we dress the supper.

Huesped. En quanto al vino, no le hái mejor en tóda España; que aunque ibo' no fói borracho, ni bebedor, lo que yo gásto éro que séa buéno, y tal le dói á mis huespedes honrádos.

Host. As for wine, there is no better in Spain; for I am no drunkard, nor yet a drinker, what I drink must be very good, and I give to my worthy guests.

R. No quisiera decir disparates, pero los buénos

R. I would not talk foolishly, but great drinkers

nos

nos bebedóres tiénen por *have a saying, that good refrán, que el buén vino wine carries men to heaven.*
lléva los hómbres al ciélo.

J. No entiendo cómo J. I do not understand
eso puéda ser. how that can be.

R. Dícen ellos, que el R. They say good wine
buén vino cría buena sán- breeds good blood, good blood
gre, la buena sangre en- begets good conditions, good
géndra buena condición, conditions bring forth good
la buena condición párē works, good works carry
buenas óbras, las buenas men to heaven.
óbras llévan los hómbres
al ciélo.

J. Dexémos éstos dí- J. Let us lay aside these
chos profanos, y vámonos profane sayings, and go to
à la iglésia mas cercána, à the next church, to return
dar grácias à Diós que nos thanks to God for having
ha trahido aquí con bién, brought us hither in safety,
y rogár nos guárde en a- and pray be will protect
delante. us for the future.

Pláticas éntre céna. Discourse at supper.

R. No hái mayór re- R. There is no greater
gálo que úna perdíz. dainty than a partridge.

J. Pára mi no le hái R. There is no greater for
mayór, que una buena me, than a good pullet.
pólla.

R. Cóntra gústo no hái R. There is no disputing
dispúta. Por esto se gásta against tastes. That is the
tódo. reason that all things go off.

J. La experiencia nos R. Experience shows,
muéstra, que lo mas es- that whatsoever is most
cásio es siémpre lo mas e- scarce, is ever most valued;
stimádo; que lo que án- for that which is over plen-
da sobrádo, en poco es tiful, is made little account
tenido. of.

R. ¡Esa es verdád míi R. That is a truth well
conocida, y arguir contra known, and to argue against
ella

ella fuéra negárse à lo que *it, would be opposing that*
 estám̄os viéndo con los o- *which we daily see with our*
 jos ; peró hai pérsonas tan *eyes; but there are some*
amigas de porfiar, que men so fond of contending,
aún lo que está patente à that they will not believe
los ójos no quiéren conce- what is evident to their eyes.
 dér.

J. Por ésto hái tántas J. *That is the reason,*
 dispútas en el mundo, por *why there are so many dis-*
 el mal naturál de tales per- *putes in the world, through*
 sónas, que no quiéren dex- *the ill disposition of such per-*
 árse llevar de la razón, si- *sons, who will not suffer*
 nó de su vanidád, la qual *themselves to be led by rea-*
 los hace nécios por no pa- *son, but by their vanity,*
 recérlo. *which makes them fools for*
fear of being thought so.

R. Esta vanidád es la R. *That vanity has the*
 que mas parte tiéne en tó- *greatest share in most things*
 do lo que hacemos, y de- *we do, and say; for there*
 cimos ; porqué pocas ó- *are few words or actions free*
 bras, o palábras hái que *from some touch of that*
 no téngan su púnta deste vice. *vicio.*

Huesped. Con su buena Host. *With your good*
 licéncia de v^s. m^s. véngo leave, Gentlemen, I come
 à sabér si está la céna à to know whether you like
 gusto ; si falta algúna có- your supper ; or whether
 sa en que les podámos fer- any thing be wanting that
 vír en esta casa, y si con- this house affords, and whe-
 ténta el vino. ther the wine is to your li-
 king.

J. Si nos quexáramos, J. *If we should complain,*
 la culpa fuéra nuéstra ; it would be our own fault ;
 que en verdád las áves no for in truth the fowls cannot
 puéden ser mejóres, ni be better, nor better dressed,
 mejor guisadas, y el vino and the wine is such, that
 es tal, que si tuviéramos if we were wont so to do,
 tal costúmbre nos hiciera it would intice us to drink
 bebér mas de lo necesario ; more than is necessary, but
 peró

peró sin cometér excésso we will make much of our
nos hemos de regalár con selves without exceeding, for
el, porque alégra el cora- it chears the heart.
zón.

R. Es mui honrádo
nuéstro huésped, y su trá-
to es confórme, y tal será
de nuéstra pártē la pága.

R. Our Host is a very
honest man, and behaves
himself accordingly, and on
our part the pay shall be sui-
table.

Huesped. Viván mis señó-
res muchos años, por la
mucha mercéd que me
hácen, y el conténto que
me dan en servir persónas
que tanto merécen ; por-
qué à véces después de
havér trabajado lo possibile
por agradár, hái algunos
que no puéden dar buena
palábra.

Host. God preserve you
many years, my masters,
for the great favour you do
me, and the satisfaction I
receive in serving persons of
so much worth ; for some-
times after all possible pains
has been taken to please,
there are some that cannot
give a good word.

J. Eso ò procéde de
tenér mui perversa condi-
ción, ò de su naturál mi-
serable ; por parecerles, believ-
iendo quanto que despreciando
les pónen delante, quedan
ménos obligados à la bu-
éna pága, riñéndo siém-
pre sobre la cuénta.

R. Eso mañana lo ve-
rémos ; y téngo en tan
buena opinión à nuéstro
huésped, que no créo I do not believe there will
havrá porqué reñir ; quán-
to y mas que no me hállo
inclinado à effas pendén-
cias, y si me la hácen úna
vez me guárdo de la se-

J. That either proceeds
from a perverse temper, or
from their covetous nature,
believing that despising all
that is set before them, they
are the less obliged to pay
generously, always making
a broil about the reckoning.

R. We shall see that to
morrow ; and I have so good
an opinion of my host, that
he any cause to differ ; be-
sides that, I am no way in-
clined to those quarrels, and
if I am once put upon, I
take care of being so a second
gúnda,

gúnda, y aviso à todos los time, and give notice to as que puédo que se guárdan. many as I can, that they may secure themselves.

Huesped. Yo les prométo à v^s. m^s. que no tendrán de que guardárse, si la cuenta no les contentáre, pagarán lo que gustáren; que yó sé que no han de querér que les sirvan de válde, ò que pierda quién les sirve.

Host. I promise you, Gentlemen, you shall have no occasion to shun me, if the reckoning does not please you, you shall pay what you please, for I know you would not be served for no-valde, ò que pierda quién tbing, or have me lose by serving you.

J. Amigo, vuéstro bien procedér nos tiéne obligados, y nosotros no dexarémos de corresponder; acostémonos ahóra, y quedad à buénas noches.

J. Friend, your civility has obliged us, and we will not fail to do accordingly; let us now go to bed, and a good night to you.

Huesped. Mui buénas felicidades dé Dios à v^s. m^s.

Host. God give you a very good night, Gentlemen.





Colóquios Espanóles è Ingleses.

Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio tercero.

COLLOQUY III.

Entre un Amo llamado Don Alónso, y su Criado, un Sástre, y una Lavandéra, y Don Pédro. Between a Master called *Don Alonso*, and his Servant, a Taylor, and a Laundress, and *Don Pedro*.

Acérca de lo que tóca al vestirse, cortesía, y nuevas. About what belongs to dressing, civility, and news.

Amo. O Yés, mózo, que hora es? Master. D^O you bear, lad, what time of the day is it?

Criádo. Son las nueve dadas. Servant. It has struck nine.

A. Porqué me dexáste dormir, sabiendo que tenía que hacér? A. Why did you let me sleep, knowing that I had business to do?

C. Por no enojár à v. m. pues quién duérme siempre siénte que le inquiéten. S. For fear of making you angry, Sir, for they that sleep, are always vexed to be disturbed.

A. Yá no se puéde remediar. Enciénde ahóra now. la lúmbre, y caliéntame warm me a shirt, and a úna camisa, y únas cétas, y sacáme ótros zónes, que me quíero levantar. M. There is no remedy. Light the fire, and pair of under-stockings, and take me out another pair of breeches, for I will rise.

C. Qual

C. Qual vestido gústa
v. m. de ponérse ? S. What suit of cloaths
will you please to put on,
Sir ?

A. Dáme el negro. M. Give me the black.

C. Lo peór es, que no
hái camisa limpia. S. The worst of it is,
that there is no clean shirt.

A. Pues cómo, tenién-
do tántas ? Eres descuidá-
do en extrémo, y me gá-
stas la paciéncia. M. How so, when I
have so many ? You are ex-
cessive careless, and tire my
patience.

C. No se impaciénte
v. m. pues bién sábe que
tódas viniéron trahidas
del camino, y que no há
havido tiémpo de lavár,
y enjugárlas, aunqué yó
múcho se lo encomendé à
la lavandéra ; peró élla se
há venido, sin llamárla. S. Sir, be not impatient ;
for you know they were all
worn, upon our journey,
and there has not been
time to wash and dry them,
though I gave the Laun-
dress a great charge about
it ; but she is come, without
sending for.

A. Bién há sucedido,
y élla meréce ser mui bi-
en pagáda por su cuidádo,
y diligencia. M. It has hapned well,
and she deserves to be very
well paid for her care, and
expedition.

Lavandéra. Diós le pá-
gue à v. m. éssa buena
consideración, y chari-
dad ; que muchos cabal-
leros hái, que quieren que
los pobres les sírvan de
válde. *Laundress.* God reward
you, Sir, for that good con-
sideration, and charity ; for
there are many Gentlemen,
who would have the poor to
serve them for nothing.

A. No se entiénde ésto
conmigo ; decíd lo que per ; say what the Linnen
mónta la rópa, y se os comes to, and you shall be
pagará. M. That is not my tem-
conmigo ; decíd lo que per ; say what the Linnen
mónta la rópa, y se os comes to, and you shall be
paid.

L. El criádo, Señór, la
contará, y me dará lo que
dába à otras. *L. The Servant, Sir,*
may count it, and give me
as he gave another.

C. A mi cuenta, mónta
diéz reáles. S. According to my rec-
koning, it comes to ten royals.

A. Esse

A. 'Effe es hacér la cu- M. That is reckoning
énta sin la huéspeda ; de- without your Hostess ; do
zid vos, Senóra, lo que os you say, mistress, what will
contentará ? content you ?

L. 'Effe, Senór, es pré- L. That, Sir, is a known
cio sabido, no hái que re- price, there is nothing to say
plicar ; si v. m. fuére ser- to it ; if it shall please you
vido de dárme algúna có- to give me something for
sa por havér trasnochá- having sat up to serve you,
do pára servíle, le esti- I will be thankful for the
maré la mercéd. favour.

A. Bién lo havéis me- M. You have well de-
recido, ahí tenéys los di- served it, there are the ten
éz reáles que mónta la ró- royals the linnen amounts to,
pa, y éstos dos de ventaja. and two royals over.

L. Mil áños víva mi L. May my master live
Séñor, à quién suplico a thousand years, and I be-
mánde siémpre à ésta su seech you always to employ
pobre criáda. this your poor servant.

A. Id con Diós, y bol- M. God go with you,
ved el sábado. Mózo, and come again on Satur-
mandástes venir el Sástre ? day. Lad, did you order
the Taylor to come ?

C. Dos horas há que le S. I called him two hours
llamé, y créo que el es ago, and believe it is be that
que súbe la escaléra. is coming up the stairs.

A. A buén tiempo lle- M. You are just come in
gáis, que ya estába para time, for I was ready to go
salir ; cómo havéis tardá- abroad ; what made you stay
do tanto ? so long ?

Sástre. No púde mas, Taylor. I could not help
Señór ; que quién sírve à it, Sir; for be that is to serve
múchos, no es dueño de many, is not master of his
su tiempo. own time.

A. Bién está, yó os hé M. It is well, I have
embíado à llamar pára que sent for you to make me two
me hagáis un par de ve- suits of cloaths.
stidos.

S. Ordéne

S. Ordéne v. m. cómo los quiere, y pára quán- do. T. Give your orders, Sir, how you will have them made, and against what time.

A. Haréisme un vestido entero de escarlata, con sus guarniciones de oro, de las mejóres. El ótro será blanquecino llá- no, sin guarnición algúna. M. You must make me a whole suit of scarlet, with gold trimming of the best. The other of a whitish colour plain, without any lacing.

S. Aquí tráhigo buena cantidá de muestras de todos géneros, v. m. míre terns of all sorts, see, Sir, si le agrádan. T. I have brought a considerable quantity of patterns of all sorts, see, Sir, whether you like them.

A. No es menestér mirallo mas ; éstas dos muestras escójo, y los vestidos se hágan con tóda brevedad. M. There is no need of looking any farther; I choose these two patterns, and let the cloaths be made as soon as possible.

S. Si v. m. no manda otra cosa, me voi à disponer lo que me há ordenado. T. If you have no other commands, Sir, I will go to provide what you have ordered.

A. Bién sabéis la confianza que hágo de vos, compradme un par de medias de seda, y ótro de estambre, dígo de medias para cada vestido : y media docena de guantes blancos ; todo que sea presto, porque como vengo de camino no tengo lo necesario para parecer en la corte. M. You know how much I confide in you, buy me one pair of silk stockings, and another of worsted, I mean stockings for each suit : and half a dozen of white gloves ; all as soon as may be, being come off a journey, I have not necessaries to appear at court.

S. Mañána à la noche estará aqui el vestido llá- garnecido, en esto no avrá falta. T. To-morrow night, the plain suit shall be here, and, two days after, the laced, there shall be no failure in it.

A. Si

A. Si así lo cumplís, M. If you perform it, I
no pido mas. desire no more.

C. Señor, aquí está Don S. Sir, Don Pédro is
Pédro. here.

A. Entre su mercéd, M. Let him come in,
pués me la hace tan grán- since he does me so great a
de en adelantárse en ve- favour as to be before-hand
nirme à vér, siendo mí with me in coming to see me,
obligación haver ído à be- when it was my duty to have
sárla la mano. gone to kiss his bands.

D. P. Dexémos cum- D. P. Let us lay aside
plimiéntos, que parécen compliments, which do not
mal éntre amigos verda- look well among real friends.
deros. V. m^d. séa mí You are very welcome, Sir,
bien venido, y me alégro and I am glad to see you in
de verle buéno. good health.

A. Y yo lo mismo de M. And so am I to find
hallarlé aquí y buéno. you here and well.

D. P. Yá que ha lle- D. P. Since the happy
gádo la feliz hora de vol- hour is come, that we are
vérnos à juntár, decidme met again, tell me something
algúna cosa de lo que ha- of what you have seen in
veis visto en Fráncia, France, which I have so
que tanto la he deseado much coveted to see my
ver.

A. Los que han cami- A. Travellers are often
nado à véces son sospe- liable to be suspected, as
chósos, tomandóse la li- taking the liberty to invent
bertad de inventár lo que whatsoever their imagina-
les dícta su imaginacion; tion dictates to them; some
unos exagerando las cósas extolling things far beyond
mí allá de la verdád, y truth, and others despising
otros despreciando quanto all that is out of their own
hái fuéra de sus propias countries. France is such
tiérras. Fráncia es tal que a one, that it needs no by-
no necesita de hypér- perboles to commend it, as
boles pára alabárla, te- having so much truly to be
niendo tanto verdadero admired, that the eyes are

A a que

que admirár, que no se *not satiated with beholding,*
 hárstan los ójos de mirár; and it is a shame there
 y es vergüenza, que háya *should be such foul tongues*
lenguas maldiciéntes que as do speak ill of it.
 se atrévan à hablar mal
 della.

D. P. Por sabér con D. P. *As I very well*
quánto desenfado algunas know with what an air
personas cuéntan lo que some persons tell what they
apénas han soñado, yo scarce dreamed, I give lit-
dóci poco crédito à lo que tle credit to what I bear in
óigo en las conversaci- conversation that accidental-
ónes que acaso se ofrécen, ly occurs, being satisfied there
conociéndo, que no faltan are men that value them-
hombres, que se precian selves upon lying; whereas
de mentir; siéndo un ví- it is a vice that all men who
cio de que todo hombre are well born ought to be
bien nacido se débe afren- ashamed of.
 tár.

A. Infame cosa es no
 tratár verdád.

D. P. Infinitos son los
 dános que acarréan éssas
 malditas hablillas.

A. Quántos predica-
 dóres hái no son bastán-
 tes pára ponér fréno à las
 lénguas, mal lo harémos
 nosotros.

D. P. A que propósito
 es el predicár, si la vída
 del predicadór no corres-
 pónde con el sermón.
 Mas fuerza tiéne un mal
 exemplo que diéz pláticas
 santas. Y lo que peór es,
 cómo los sermones se há-
 cen por fines mundáños,

A. It is an infamous
 thing not to speak truth.

D. P. Infinite mischiefs
 are the consequence of that
 cursed little tattle.

M. All the preachers in
 the world are not able to
 curb tongues, it is not likely
 that we should do it.

D. P. To what purpose is
 life is not suitable to the ser-
 mon. One bad example is
 more prevalent than ten bo-
 ly discourses. And what is
 still worse, the sermons be-
 ing made for worldly ends,
 it is not to be wondered

no hái que espántar que *that they produce no spiritual fruit.*
áles.

A. La mala vida de los eclesiásticos es la *churchmen are the ruin of the laity.* But let us not Peró no nos vámos embarcando en vidas ajénas ; *launch out too far in other mens lives ; let every man cáda uno míre por si, y look to himself, and the andará el mundo mejor.* *world will go better.*

D. P. Así es ; volvámos pues à vuéstro viáge, y contádme alguna cosa del.

D. P. That is right ; let us therefore return to your travels, and tell me something of them.

A. Que os hé de contar ? Estas relaciones piden mucho espacio ; si desseáis informáros, leéd éssos borradóres, en los quáles hallaréis muchas particularidades, que íba assentando miéntras las tenía fréscas en la memoria.

A. What shall I tell you ? Those relations require much leisure ; if you desire to be informed, read these notes, in which you will find many particulars, whilst they were fresh in my memory.

D. P. Pára mi no havrá mayór placér. Pero decidme que os parece de la nación Francésa.

D. P. Nothing can be more pleasing to me. But tell me your opinion of the French nation.

A. Acérca de la Nación Francésa no tengo que decir otra cosa, sino que todos, en común, son muy civiles, pero es mejor una grande arte para tratár con ellos, pues son muy sagaces y engañosos.

A. As to the French nation, I have nothing else to say, than that all in general are very civil ; but to treat with them, is requisite great consideration, because they are very cunning and deceitful.

D. P. Esso yá me lo sabía yo antes, pués uno de ellos me engañó condos de 200 piezas de mil

mil pesos que le presté ; *eight that I lent him ; and y lo peor es, que jamás what is the worst, is, that* oí palabra de el hasta la *I never heard a word from* semana pasada, que rece- *bim till last week, that I* bí una carta suya. *received a letter from him.*

A. Apostaré, que es la misma persona que yo vi *that is the same person I* en Orleáns, pues me hablo de v. m. este se llama *saw at Orleans, because he spoke to me of you, his name was*

D. P. El mismo, pero la carta que tengo, lleva la fecha de París. D. P. *The very same, but the letter I have from him, bears its date from Paris.*

A. Bien puede ser, porque según me díxo, tenia intención de partirse para París el día siguiente. M. *That may well be, because as he told me, he had a mind to set out for Paris the next day.*

D. P. Que haré yo para cobrar mi dinero ? D. P. *What shall I do to get my money ?*

A. Que ? Venirse conmigo à París, y obligarle allí que le pague ; yo intento volver allá dentro de dos meses, y el me díxo que quería establecerse alla en la calle de San António, en donde vive sus Padres. Y con esto v. m^d. tendrá el gusto de ver las muchas y magníficas fábricas que hái en Fráncia, y especialmente el Palacio y jardines de Versailles, que son los mejores del mundo. M. *What ? Come to Paris with me, and oblige him there to pay you ; I intend to return thither within two months, and he told me that he would settle himself there in St Anthony's street, where his parents live. And with this opportunity you will have the pleasure of seeing the many and magnificent buildings that are in France, and especially the palace and gardens of Versailles, which are the best in the world.*

D. P. Así lo haré, y vóime ahóra à hablar so-

D. P. *So I will, and I go now to speak to my fa-*

bre ello à mi Padre que ther about it, who is at
está en casa.

A. A Diós pués, pero M. Farewel then, but
déxese ver mañána, y ha- let me see you to-morrow,
blarémos mas sobre esto. and we will speak more up-
on this subject.

D. P. Está bien ; à Dí- D. P. It is well ; fare-
os. well.



Colóquios Espanóles è Ingleses.

Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio quarto.

Sobre várias Matérias, én-
tre quatro Camaradas,
Diégo, Fernández, Tho-
más, y Eduárdo.

COLLOQUY IV.

Upon several Subjects,
between four Compa-
nions, James, Ferdi-
nand, Thomas, and Ed-
ward.

D. Y'A que hémos co-
mido, vámonos
à paseár al jardín, que
dicén es buéno pára la di-
gestión, y escusarémos de
dormír la siesta.

F. Dezís bién, que ésta
costúmbe de dormír es
muí perezosa, y si no es
en tiempo de grandíssima
calór, mejor es divertir-
nos.

T. No gastémos el ti-
empo en ceremonias, que

J. NOW we have
dined, let us go
walk in the garden, which
they say is good for digestion,
and we shall avoid sleeping
the afternoon nap.

P. You are in the right,
for this custom of sleeping is
very buriful, and unless it
be when the heat is excessive,
it is better to take some di-
version.

T. Let us not spend time
in ceremonies, for it is very

es muí mal gastádo, y no ill spent, and I do not love gústo déllas. them.

E. A mi no me agrá. E, I like them not, but dan, mas la cortesía siém- civility is always good. pre es buena.

D. Repáren bién en lo que viéren, y verán múa- what you see, and you will cha curiosidád en éste jar- see much curiosity in this dín, que es úno de los me- garden, which is one of the jores que se hállan en éstas best that are in these parts. pártes.

F. 'Estos andámios son muí agradables por la sombra de los árboles, y lo odorífero de las múrtas. F. These walks are very agreeable for the shade of the trees, and the sweet scent of the mirtle.

T. 'Otra buena calidád tienen, que es, ser lárgos good quality, which is, that pára evitar las muchas vueltas à que obligan los círtos; y lo áncho que short ones; and their puéden andar seis personas à la par con descánso. T. They have another they are long to save the ten turning there must be in puéden andar seis personas breadtb, that six persons can walk abreast in them.

E. Las éras tan límpias que se puéde dormir en ellas; y segúrn la yérba e- stá verde parécen mullidas, y comvidan à echárse en éllas. E. The beds are so neat that they are fit to sleep on them; and the grass so green, that they look soft, and intend to lie down upon them.

D. 'Ella enramada es deleitosa en el veráno, es- puésta à todos los viéntos para refrescar, y libre de los ráyos del sol. D. That arbour is delightful in summer, exposed to all winds to refresh, and free from the sun-beams.

F. 'Esta grúta con tódo, en mi opinión, le háze múa- cha ventaja en lo fresco, y en lo apacible, semejáse mucho con lo natural, y gótica los adórnos del arte. F. However this grotto, in my opinion, is much be- yond it for coolness, and a- greeableness, it looks very natural, and has the ornaments of art.

T. Aquélla

T. Aquélla fuénte es
béllo, y aquélla cascáda tiful, and that cascade
háce un ruído que paréce makes a noise that seems to
alégra, y al mismo tiém- exbilarate, and at the same
po adorméce los sentídos time lulls the senses asleep
con lo incessáble del sonido. with the incessant sound.

E. Adelantémonos un
poco à ver los frutáles, y
gozár de su frúta.

D. Pára mi no la hái
mas deliciosa que los hí-
gos, y aquí los hái en per-
fección.

F. Yo me conténto con
duráznos, quando son peaches, when they are large
grández y madúros, como and ripe, as these on this
los déste arbol.

T. 'Estos melocotones
me llévan à mi los ójos, cbarm my eyes, and they
y tienen élllos un gústo soberáno.

E. Por no querér lo
que ótro quiére, pués tó-
dos se han diferenciado, since you have all varied, I
yó escójo pára mi éstas make choice of those berga-
Péras bergamótas, y rega-
lémonos cáda qual confór-
me à su apetito.

D. No nos dexémos
llevár, cómo les níños, ed like children, by the fruit,
de la frúta, que Diós crió which God made for suste-
pára el sustento, y no pá-
ra engolosinárnos. Escu-
chémos un rato el dulce listen to the sweet singing of
cánto de los pajarillos, the little birds, who with-
que sin ayúda de maéstros out the help of masters make
hácen una musica, quán-

T. That fountain is beau-
tiful, and that cascade
makes a noise that seems to
please, and at the same
time lulls the senses asleep
with the incessant sound.

E. Let us advance a lit-
tle to see the fruit trees, and
enjoy the fruit.

J. None is more delicious
to me than figs, and here
they are in perfection.

F. I am satisfied with
peaches, when they are large
and ripe, as these on this
tree.

T. These melocotones
charm my eyes, and they
have a sovereign taste.

E. Because I will not be
for the same as another is,
since you have all varied, I
make choice of those berga-
mot pears, and let us treat
ourselves every one to his
own appetite.

J. Let us not be delud-
ed like children, by the fruit,
which God made for suste-
nance, and not to indulge
our appetite. Let us a while
listen to the sweet singing of
the little birds, who without
the help of masters make
such musick, as is the more

to mas natural, mas maravilloso. wonderful, the more natural it is.

F. Ellos los únos de los otros aprénden, y los que mas habilidad tienen salen mas diestros, como éntre los hombres; que cada discípulo salé conforme al talento que Diós le dió, y no conforme al maestro. F. They learn of one another, and those which have the best capacity prove most skilful, as it is among men; for every learner proves according to the talent God has given him, and not according to the master,

T. El Ruíseñor es milagro de la naturaléza, y háce ventaja à todos los demás. No lo he visto, pero afirman que es tanta la fuerza que ponen en cantar, que se caen muertos. T. The nightingale is a wonder in nature, and surpasses all others. I have seen it, but it is affirmed, that they sometimes strain themselves so much with singing, that they drop down dead.

E. La calándria no le queda à debér mucho al ruíseñor, y no se si à veces no le iguála; ni es menos de estimar al guéro, peró sobre todos es el canário. E. The lark comes not far behind the nightingale, and perhaps sometimes equals him; nor is the goldfinch less valuable, but the canary bird is beyond them all.

D. De los cantores habéis nombrado los principales y merécen ser estimados; peró que haya payaros que apréndan à formar voz humana, y hablar palabras distintas, es lo mas de maravillar, y he oido yo mismo un pagayo que cantava de tal manéra, que quántos le oían sin vérle, juzgavan que era persona humana. D. You have named the chiefest of the singers, and they deserve to be valued; but that there should be birds that learn to form a human voice, and speak distinct words, is most to be admired, and I myself have heard a parrot that sung after such a manner, that all who heard him, concluded it was some human person.

F. También háblan las maricas, y los tórdos; pero jamás con la perfección que los Papagáyos; y es díg- no de reparár que tenién- édan formár palábras, lo qual por ésto éllas hácen allá en el gaznate.

E. Magpies, and black- birds, also talk ; but never so perfectly as parrots ; and it is worth observing, that those birds having beaks, and not mouths like us, they can form words, which they do within their throats.

T. Múcho háí que considerár en el hablar y cantar de las aves ; pero también me paréce que merece nuéstra atención aquella prodigiosa variedad de colóres, que se hál-la éntre ellas, porque a-pénas el arte ha llegado à igualárlas.

E. Mui hermosas las produce nuéstra Európa, pero no llégan con mucho à las que se hállan en la Asia, y la América.

D. Conversando acérca de las aves nos hallámos éntre éstos estánques, que se hallán mui bien proveídos de todos los géneros de péces que viven en semejantes aguas, y hái diferentes géneros déllos.

F. Lo principal en estos estánques son picas, o lú- fos, y cárpas ; pero en éste río se cógen infinitas trú- chas, y à su tiémpos sal- mónes que súben de la

F. Much reflexion may be made upon the talking and singing of birds ; but I am of opinion that the prodigious variety of colours, that is found among them, deserves our observation, for art has scarce been able to match them.

E. Europe produces very beautiful birds, but they do not come near those that are found in Asia, and America.

D. Discoursing concerning the birds we are come among these ponds, which are very well stored with all the sorts of fish that live in such waters, there are several sorts of them.

F. The chiefest in these ponds are pikes, or jacks, and carps ; but in this river an infinite number of trouts are taken, and in the sea-mónes that come up mar-

mar à desovár, y después from the sea to spawn, and en su sazón los salmonzil- afterwards at their time the los que báxan à criárse en small salmon that go down la mar. to thrive in the sea.

T. Esta es otrá de las T. This is another of the maravillas de la natura- wonders of nature, or to léza, o hablando con mas speak more properly, of the propriedád, de la divina divine wisdom, the immen- sabiduría, la immensidád sity of the sorts of fishes, de géneros de péces, sus their different shapes, that diferentes fórmas, aquél- hideous magnitude of some, la espantosa grandeza de and the strange smallness of los únos, y la rara peque- others. ñez de ótros.

E. Múcha es la distin- E. There is a great di- ción en los tamáños, cómo versity in sizes, as also in también en la figura, o the figure, or make, but as hechura, pero en lo que for beauty, I know not of tóca à hermosüra, no sé any that is among them all, que se halle en algúno dél- on the contrary most of them los, ántes los mas son dis- are misshapen, and no way fórmes, y poco agradables pleasing to the sight, having à la vista, sin tener cosa nothing agreeable to the eyes, que conténte à los ójos, a- besides their being dumb, and demás de ser mudos, y having no voice. faltárles voz.

D. Si no puéden entre- J. Though they cannot tenér los ójos, ni los oídos; entertain the eyes, nor the aloménos no les falta con ears; however, they do not que satisfacér el gústo; want something to please the pués no hái mayór regálo taste; for there are no que el que nos dan la mar, greater dainties than those y los ríos, en tan vários the sea, and rivers afford plátos como déllos se fá- us, in such variety of dishes can, si no faltan buénos as are taken from them, cocinéros que los sépan if there be no want of cooks guisar.

F. No quíero despreciar lo que tanta parte del mundo estima ; pero para mi mas vale una pierna de carné, o un lomo de vaca que quanto las aguas producen ; y sivamos a las aves, éstas en delicadeza sobrepújan quanto hái en el universo para el sustento humano.

T. Digo que tenéis bien gusto, y me atengo yo a la carne que cría carne, y satisface, dexando el estómago bien proveido para en adelante ; siendo el pescado de la naturaléza del eleménto en que se cría, que por mas que se hárte una persona, luégo se hälla con hambre, porqué no queda substancia.

E. No puédo ir contra ésse parecer, pero con todo vémos que hái géntes en el mundo que mas viven de pescado que de carne, y noobstante son robustas, y en las grandes mésas tiénen en mucho el salmon, las langostas, las ostras, y otros pescados salados, y en escabeche dan mas nutrimento, entre los quáles se puéden contár el abadéjo, el esturion, y el atún.

F. I will not undervalue that which so great part of the world values ; but for my part I had rather have a leg of mutton, or a loin of beef, than all that the waters produce ; and if we go on to the fowls, they in delicacy exceed all the world affords for the sustenance of men.

T. I say you are in the right, and I am for flesh which breeds flesh, and satisfies, leaving the stomach well furnished for the time to come ; whereas fish is of the nature of the element it is bred in, so that though a man eat never so much to satiety, he is presently hungry again, because no substance remains.

E. I cannot oppose that opinion, however we see there are people in the world who live more upon fish than upon flesh, and notwithstanding they are strong, and at great tables they highly value salmon, lobsters, oysters, and many other sorts ; and fish that is salted, or pickled affords more nutriment, among which may be reckoned poor jack, surgeon, and tunny fish.

D. Con qualquier cosa que nos criémos es cierto we are bred with, it is certain que hemos de crecer, y tain that we shall tdrive, hallárnos bien ; assi vé- and do well ; thus we see mos que no hái hómbres there are no men stronger, mas fuértes y bien dispus- and lustier than those of éstos que los de algunas some of the very northern pártes mui septentrioná- parts, where from their in- les, dónde désde la niñez, fancy, their main sustenance su principal sustento, es is barley, or oaten bread, pan de cebáda, y avéna, some milk, roots, without algúna leche, raíces, sin being ever acquainted with fabér que cosa es vino, y wine, and very little with mui poco de carne, o pes- flesh, or fish. cado.

F. Los que se crían con regálo no pueden con é- stos mantenimientos. La naturaléza con poco se conténta, pero hásé de ha- cér el cuérpo à ello désde los priméros áños, que des- pués es tarde. Mirémos nuéstras dámás melindró- fas, si les pusiéran delante lo que son regálos pára nues- trás labradóras, no les entrára bocádo en el cuér- po.

F. Those who are dainti- ly bred cannot bear that sort of food. Nature is satisfied with little, but the body must be innured to it from the first years, for afterwards it is too late. Let us look upon our squeamish ladies, if they should have such things set before them, as are dainties for our countrywomen, not one morsel would go into their stomach.

T. Yá que se ha hablado tanto del comér, razón been said of eating, it is but reasonable we should not forget also se ha de bebér, y get that we are also to drink, dexando aparte el agua and leaving aside the water que crío Diós en general which God created not only no sólo pára los hombres, for men, but also for all the finó también pára quántos creatures he has placed in animáles ha puéstlo en este this world in general, wine mundo, es el víno el mas is the most sovereign of all soberáno

soberano de quántos li- *the liquors that have been*
quóres hasta este día se han *known to this day, or that*
conocido, o que las edá- *future ages, and human in-*
des venidéras, y la humá- *vention will ever find out for*
na invención hallarán pa- *the benefit of rational crea-*
ra bién de las criaturas ra- *tures.*
cionales.

E. Los vinos que pro-
dúce sólo *España* apénas
se puéden contár, pués
que será de tódas las ótras
tiérras? Hablár déssó fué-
ra nunca acabár. El ví-
no en general tiéne mu-
chas virtúdes templada-
memente usádo, y sin fer me-
nester acudir à los médi-
cos que nos las dígan, o
à los autóres antiguos, la
éspériencia nos enséña que
da fuerzas, alégra el ró-
stro, fortifica los nérvios,
ayúda à la vista de los ójos,
esfuérza el estomágo, há-
ce buena digestion, despi-
értal el apetito, hácet buén
suéño, quítal la tristeza, y
pónal alegría en el corazón,
que son bastantes alabán-
zas, y verdádes conocí-
das, que no hái quien las
puéda negar, y sin tódo
esto es tan agradáble al
gústo hai tántos que se pi-
érdan.

D. En verdád que ha-
véis acertado en no can-
farnos con los disparates

E. *The wines Spain a-*
lone produces are hardly to
be reckoned up, what then
must there be in all other
countries? To talk of that
would be endless. Wine in
general has many virtues
moderately used, and with-
out being obliged to have re-
course to physicians, or an-
cient authours, experience
teaches us, that it gives
strength, makes the coun-
tenance chearful, fortifies
the nerves, helps the sight
of the eyes, cherishes the sto-
macb, causes good digestion,
sharpens the appetite, causes
sound sleep, drives away me-
lancholy, and rejoyses the
heart, which are sufficient
commendations, and known
truths, which no man can
deny, and besides all this it
is so agreeable to the palate,
that so many are ruined on-
ly for that pleasure.

J. *In truth you have*
been in the right in not tir-
farnos con los disparates
ing us with the absurdities
de

de muchos de los antiguos, con que siempre nos están empalagando los modernos, que quieren ganar fama de muy leídos, porque son tan enfadadas sus reglas, que no hay paciencia que baste para ellas. 'Uno nos enseña quanta agua se ha de mezclar con el vino; otro pone taza en las veces que se ha de beber; otro nos dice hasta que edad nos hemos de abstener; otro no quiere que lo beban las mujeres; y así otras mil particularidades conforme a lo que cada uno de ellos tenía entonces en la cabecera.

F. Yo no entiendo para que son tantos preceptos, todo hombre comprendiendo lo que en este caso le conviene, sin que sean menester cuentos viejos de dos mil años; y los borrachos se rien, y reniegan de todas esas vejez. Quanto y mas que hai mozos que no necesitan menos de un trago de vino que los viejos, y hai estómagos que requieren dobladá la cantidad que otros. Pués decir que no lo beban las mugeres tambien tiene su pedazo de locura, como si sus cu-

of many of the ancients, with which the moderns who would gain the reputation of having read much are always cloying us, for their rules are so disagreeable, that no patience can bear them. One of them teaches us how much water must be mixed with our wine; another fixes the number of glasses that is to be drunk; another tells us till what age we must abstain; another will not allow women to drink it; and thus a thousand fopperies, according to what every one of them had at that time in his head.

F. I do not understand what so many precepts are for, every moderate man knows what is fit for him in this case, without standing in need of old stories of two thousand years; and drunks laugh at, and curse all those antiquities. Besides that, there are some young men who have no less occasion for a glass of wine than the old, and there are stomachs that require double the quantity as others. Then to say that women must not drink it, is also a piece of madness; as if their bodies were not human, and did érpos

érgos no fuérán humáños, *not stand in need of that*
y no necessitáran de aquél *comfort as well as men.*
alivio también cómo los
hombres.

T. Que mayór locúra
puéde havér que el ir à pe- ness can there be than to go
dír conséjo de los muertos ask advice of the dead, for
pára lo que estámos vién- those things we see with our
do con los ójos, y palpán- eyes, and feel with our
do con las manos? Peró bands? But that custom is
está éssa costúmbre tan in- so established, that the be-
troducida, que no sólo en tben philosophers are not on-
das conversaciónes entrán ly ibrush into conversation,
los philosophos gentiles, without bead or tail; but
sin que ni para que; mas the very preachers stun us
los mismos predicadóres with sentences from Plato,
nos atúrden con sentén- Seneca, Pliny, Socrates,
cias de Platón, de Seneca, &c. as if tbere were no bo-
de Plínio, de Sócrates, &c. ly fatbers, and cbristian
cómo si no huviéra, sán- doctors to have recourse to.
tos pádres, y doctóres
christiános à quién acudir.

E. No hái cosa mas e- E. Nothing is more nota-
vidénte que los grándes rious than the great bene-
biénes que háce el vino al fits human race receives
género humano; pero from wine; but at the same
también es gran lástima time it is a great pity that
que la demasia cáuse tán- the excess of it should occa-
tos dáños, y no es de es- sion so many mischiefs, nor
pantár, porqué según ré- is it to be wondered at, for
glas de philosophía la cor- according to the maxims of
rupción de lo mejor es la philosophy, the corruption of
péor, es à sabér, que the best things is worst, that
quánto mejores son las có- is, how much the better
fas en si mismas tanto things are in themselves, so
mas pernicioñas son, quán- much the more pernicious
do o éllas se corrómpen, they are, when either they
o nosotros usámos mal are themselves corrupted, or
délitas.

D. Bién

D. Bién haveis repará-
do en ésto, porqué es ci-
erto que no hai cosa que
más malas acarrée que el
demasiado bebér. Quán-
tas muértes, quántos al-
borotos, quántas deshone-
stidádes ha occasionado la
embriaguéz ; y quántos
milláres, sin hacer daño à
otros han destruído su sa-
lud, è incurrido en infini-
tas desgracias, por havérse
facádo de juicio con éste
abominable vicio ; sin ha-
blar de la deshónra, o por
mejor decir infamia de
ponérse un hombre en
peór estado que las béstias
mas brútas, por tan estra-
gido apetito como es el
bebér con demasia.

J. You have observed
right, for it is certain that
nothing produces more mis-
eries than too much drink-
ing. How many murders,
how many uproars, how
many lewd practices has
drunkenness occasioned ; and
how many thousands, with-
out doing harm to others
have destroyed their own
health, and fallen into infinite
misfortunes by having put
themselves beside their rea-
son by this abominable vice ;
not to speak of the dishonour,
or to speak more properly of
the infamy of a man's put-
ting himself into a worse
condition than the most bru-
tal beasts, for the sake of so
depraved an appetite as
drinking too much.

F. En muchas pártes
del mundo, no las quiéro
nombrár por no offendér
à nadie, y por no ser ne-
cessario, pués tódos los
conócen, se ha introduci-
do tanto ésta maldita co-
stumbre, que el emborra-
chárse no se tiéne por a-
frénta; ántes hái lócos, que
no les puédo dar ótro ti-
tulo, que se precian de
emborrachár à otros, y
cuéntan éstas fealdádes có-
mo si fuéran las mayóres
hazáñas. Y me avergu-

F. In several parts of
the world, I will not name
them to avoid giving offence
to any body, and because it
is not necessary, since all
men know them, this curs-
ed custom has so far taken
place, that to be drunk is
not looked upon as a dis-
grace ; on the contrary there
are mad men, for I can
give them no other title,
who value themselves upon
making others drunk, and
relate those shameful actions,
as if they were the greatest
énçó

énzo de decíllo, hái yá exploits. And I am ashaméres que se igúalan en med to tell it, tbere are ésta viléza con los hóm- now women that can match bres mas infames, espo- the most infamous men in niéndose à qualquier desa- tthis vile practice, exposing tino ; pués haviéndo per- themselves to any folly ; for dido la razón, póco hái when they have lost their que fiár de lo demás. reason, there is little trust- ing to the rest.

T. Con ser cósa naturál T. Though it be natural el bebér agua, no se han to drink water, men have contentádo los hómbres not been satisfied with it, con élla ; que en las tiér- for in those countries which ras adónde no náce víno, produce no wine, they have han inventádo ótros gé- invented other sorts of lneros de breváges, entre quors, among which, the los quáles el mas usádo most usual is beer, which es la cervéza, la qual há- they make so strong, that it cen tan fuérte que à veces sometimes exceeds wine, soprepúja el víno, aunque though it is not so whole- no es tan sána ; con que le some, so that it wants the fálta lo bueno, y le sóbra good, and has too much of lo malo, y en particular the evil, and particularly it lléna los cuérpos de ven- fills the bodies with wind. tosidád.

E. Pués la cídra, aun- E. Then as for cider, qué es mas naturál, y le though it is more natural, hácemucha ventája à la and much preferable to beer, cervéza, no puéde com- it cannot stand in competi- petir con el víno, siendo tion with wine, as being vermuí crúda ; con que cáusa ry raw, so that it occasions desconciérto en los que no fluxes in such as are not se han bién acostumbrádo well used to it.

à ella.

D. También se bébe J. The juice of pears el zúmo de las péras, y (perry) is also drunk, and es tenido por mas perni- is looked upon as more mis- cióso que la cídra. La a- chievous than cider. Mead llója es cósa regaláda en el is very delicious in summer,

veráno, si se repára en so- if we only look to our pa-
lo el apetito ; pero si mirá- late ; but if we regard
mos la salúd, es muí fría health, it is too cold for the
pára el estomágo, y por stomach, and therefore it is
ésto se ha introducido el become customary, to tem-
mesclárla con ún poco de per it with a little brandy ;
água ardiente ; pero aún but even in that case it is
en ésto es menestér andár requisite to use caution, that
con tiénto que no séa de- it be not too much.
masiáda.

F. En buena conversa- *V.* We are got into a ve-
ción nos hémos metido, ry fine discourse, that if any
que quién nos oyésse, pu- should bear us they might
diéra tenérnos en opinión take us for good drinkers,
de buénos bebedóres, sin though we have not deserv-
havér merecido tan mala ed that bad name. Let us
fáma. Volvámos pués à iben return home, whilst
cásá miéntras se hace hó- supper-time comes on, for it
ra de cenár, que yá pré- will soon draw near, and
sto se irá llegando, y no we shall not want something
faltará en que entretenér- to divert us.
nos.

T. Tenéis mucha ra- *T.* You are much in the
zón, pués agóra da el re- right, for the clock now
lóx las siéte, y es buéno strikes seven, and it is good
cenár tempráno, pára no to sup early, to avoid go-
acostárse con el estómago ing to bed with a full sto-
cargádo, y tener tiempo mach, and to have time to
de parlár, y divertírnos. chat and to divert ourselves.

E. 'Esto muí bién se *E.* That can be very
háce sóbre céna, y mas well done after supper, es-
con un traguito de vino pecially with a moderate
moderado, que así alégra glass of wine, for so it
el corazón. bears the heart.



Coloquios Espanóles è Ingleses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio quinto. COLLOQUY V.

Entre dos Dámas, dos Caballeros, y dos Criadas. Between two Ladies, two Gentlemen, and two Maid-Servants.

Sobre várias Matérias. Upon various Subjects.

D. i. **V**Enid acá María, y compónedme éste tocado; no os detengáis en impertinencias, bién sabéis que no presúmo de mi, ni enamorát à nadie; pára mí el adorno decente, pára no parecer ridícula.

Come bither Mary, and do not dwell upon im- pertinence, you know I have no conceit of my self, nor do I desire to make any body fall in love; it is enough for me to be decently dressed, not to appear ridiculous.

Cr. i. Es v. m. muí facil de contentár, dichófa yó en servir à quién tiene tan buén gusto; y bien desdichadas de las hóoras en pié pára compóner úna Dama, y por cárbo les paréce que no háicosa bien hécha.

i. Serv. Madam, you are easily pleased, I am happy in serving one that has so good a fancy; and who must be unhappy they who must be standing to dress a lady, and after all they think nothing well done.

D. i. Si en mi halláres cosa buena, no quieró

i. L. If you see any thing that is good in me, I would

que me lo dígas, que pa- *not have you tell me of it,*
 réce adulación, cuéntalo, *for it looks like flattery, you*
si quisiéres, en mi ausén- *may tell it, if you will, in*
cia ; lo málo que en mi my absence ; what ill you
viéres, dímelo à mi, que see in me, tell me of it, and
te lo agradeceré ; y callalo I will thank you ; and con-
afuéra. *ceal it abroad.*

Cr. 2. Mi Señóra Do- *2 Serv. My Lady Su-*
ña Susána está aquí. *fanna is here.*

D. 1. Pués la tiénes al- *1 L. Do you keep her*
lá, sin decirle que éntre ? *there, without bringing her*
Como os hacéis Señóra *in ? Madam, wby do you*
tan estráña ; siéndo tan a- *make your self so great*
migas, pára que usáys de *a stranger, wben we are*
cumpliméntos, sabiéndo *such friends, wby do you*
que no gústo dellos ? *use compliments, knowing I*
I do not love them ?

D. 2. No paréce cor- *2 L. It does not look like*
tesía entrárse sin avisár ; y *good breeding, to come in*
aunque nüéstra amistád *without giving notice ; and*
paréce discúlpa, siémpre tho' *our friendship seems an*
es buéno el decóro, y dí- *excuse, yet decency is al-*
cen que la demasiáda fa- *ways good, and it is a say-*
miliaridád cáusa despré- *ing, that too much familia-*
cio. *rity breeds contempt.*

D. 1. 'Eso no se en- *1 L. That is not to be*
tiénde éntre nosótras ; pe- *understood between us ; but*
ró aquí viéne Don Juán, *bere comes Don John, who*
que es perfóna de mucho *is a person of much worth,*
mérito, y muí entretení- *and very good company.*
do.

Cabal. 1. Mil áños vi- *1 Gent. Long may they*
va quién tánta hónra me *live who do me so much ho-*
háce, mereciéndo yó tan *nour, wben I deserve so lit-*
póco ; aunque no estóí *tle ; tho' I am not quite*
sin mérito, pués trahigo a- *void of merit, for I have*
quí à Don Rodrígó, en *brought Don Rodrígó, on*
quién serán bién emple- *whom those commendations*
adas éssas alabanzas. *may be well bestowed.*

Cab. 2. No quíero ref- *2 Gent.* *I will not an-*
pondér, no piénsen éstas *swear,* *lest these ladies should*
Señóras que venímos de *think,* *that we have agreed*
conciérto à decir bién de *to speak favourably of our*
nosotros mismos. *selves.*

D. 1. Sientense v^s. m^s. *1 L.* *Be pleased to sit*
sin ceremonias, que es *down without ceremony, for*
tiempo perdido el que se *all the time that is spent in*
gásta en éllas. *it is lost.*

Cab. 1. No es ceremó- *1 Gent.* *The respect that*
nia el respéto que se débe *is due to Ladies is no cere-*
à las Dámas; ni es lisón- *mony; nor is it any flat-*
ja decir lo que está patén- *terry to utter that which is*
te à todos; y por ésto po- *apparent to all men; and*
dré afirmár que éntre las *therefore I may affirm, that*
ótras perfecciones que a- *among all the perfections*
compánan à mi Señóra *that attend my Lady I-*
Dóña Isabel, se esméra en fabel, *she excels in the*
escogér criádas; qué si no choice of her maids; for if
estuviéran preséntes dos *there were not two such*
táles bellézas, pareciéra beauties present, *that of*
soberána la destá donzél- *this maiden would seem sur-*
la, à quien Diós haga di- *prizing, God make her ve-*
chósa. *ry fortunate.*

D. 1. Si le decís à la *1 L.* *If you tell a wo-*
mugér que es hermósa ú- *man once that she is hand-*
na vez, el diáblo se lo *some, the devil will tell her*
dirá diéz, según la vul- *so ten times, according to*
gar opinión; por ésto me- *the vulgar notion; for*
jór es callár las alabanzas, *which reason it is better to*
aunque séan verdadéras, *forbear praises, though they*
que no ponérles motivos *be true, than to give them*
de vanidád, que siémpre *occasion for vanity, which*
fóbran en nosótras. *is always overflowing in us.*

D. 2. No se que tiénen *2 L.* *I know not what*
los hómbres, que por mas *ails men, that though they*
que apetézcan las hermó- *are never so fond of beauti-*
fas cómo haya dinéros se *ful women, provided there be*
cásan con las féas. *money, they marry the ugly.*

Cab. 2. 'Ellos dicen 2 Gent. They say they que las tóman à peso, sin *take them by weight*, with- mirár en la hechúra. *out regarding the fashion.*

D. 1. Si no fuéra assí, 1 L. If it were not for muchas desgraciádas se *that*, many unfortunate fuéran vírgenes à la sepul- ones would carry their mai- túra. *denheads to their graves.*

Cab. 1. Despoblárase 1 G. That way the déssa manéra el mundo, world would be unpeopled, pués es verdád conocida, since it is a known truth, que pára úna buéna cára *that for one good face there hái tres málas, y mas de are three bad ones, and a-* quátro que apénas se pué- *bove four that can scarce be den llamár passadéras. called tolerable.*

D. 2. Por lo que se ha 2 L. That which has dicho, hái tantos mal ca- been said is the reason that sados; porqué tomándose tbere are so many unhappy à peso, no puéden con la couples; for as they take cárga, y dan con élla en one another by weight, they el suélo, buscando ótros cannot bear the burden, but entretenimientos. let it drop to seek other di- versions.

Cab. 2. No salen siém- 2 Gent. Marriages are pre desgraciádos los casa- not always unhappy by rea- miéntos por las málas cá- son of the bad faces, but ras, antes mas véces por oftnier on account of the las peores condiciones. worse conditions.

D. 1. Pués assí es, me 1 L. Since it is so, I am paréce que cómo hái Tri- of opinion, that as tbere bunáles pára todos delitos, are Courts for all crimes, le havía dehaver particular there ought to be in parti- pára los que cométen los cular for those that mar- casados; no digo sólo pá- ried persons are guilty of; ra los adulterios, pero I do not mean only for a- también para castigár las dulteries, but also to punish culpas que se cométen én- the faults that are commit- tre marido y mugér en ted between husband and no tratárse cómo dében wife in not treating one a- con amór, y respéto, neither as they ought, with dexándose

dexándose llevár de sus *affection, and respect,* gi-
passiones, con que se pi- ing way to their passions,
érde la paz pará siémpre. which destroys some for ever.

Cab. 1. 'Eſſos juéces 1 G. Those judges ought
havían de tener don de to have the gift of prophecy;
prophecia; que de otra for otherwise it would be
manéra fuéra impossible impossible to decide who had
averiguár quién tenía mas been most to blame in those
cúlpa en éſtas pendencias home broils; and for the
caseras; y las mas véces most part the women are
ſon las mugéres las que- the plaintiffs, the men being
xóſas, callando los hóm- silent to avoid discovering
bres por no descubrir su their ſhame.
afrénta.

Cab. 2. Pués se ha ha- 2 G. Since mention has
blado de juícios, aunque been made of judgments,
no ſea à éſte propóſito, though it be not to this pur-
ſino les desagrada à é- pose, if it be not displeasing
ſtas Señoras, diré uno no- to theſe Ladies, I will re-
table del Rey Don Pédro, late a very notable one of
que por fer desgraciado, King Peter, whom because
le llamaron el crueſt. be was unfortunate, they
called the crueſt.

D. 2. Díga v. m. mui 2 L. Tell it, in God's
en buéna hora, pués no name, Sir, since we are
tenemos obligación de a- not bound to confine our
tárnos à úna matéria, y ſelves to one ſubjeſt, and
la variedad es agradable. variety is pleasing.

Cav. 2. Con éſſa licén- 2 G. Upon that permis-
cia dígo, que un Arcedi- fion, I say, that an Arch-
áno de la Iglesia de Sevila- deacon of the church of Se-
la, mató à un zapatéro, vil killed a ſhoemaker, and
y un hijo ſuyo fué à pe- a ſon of his went to demand
dir justicia. Condenóle justice. The ecclesiastical
el Juéz Ecclesiástico en Judge condemned him not to
que no dixéſſe míſſa un ſay mass in one year. Soon
áño. Désde à pocos dí- after King Peter came to
as víno el Rey Don Pédro Sevil, and the dead man's
a Sevilla, y el híjo del ſon complained to him of

muerto se le quexó de la dicha muerte. El Rey le pereguntó, si havía pedido justicia. El le contó el caso cómo pasaba. Dijo el Rey, Serás tu hombre para matarle, pues no te hacén justicia? Si Señor, respondió el zapatero. Pués hazlo así, dijo el Rey. El día siguiente viéndole el Arcediácono bien cerca del Rey en una procesión, llegóse el agravado, y dióle dos puñaladas de que cayó muerto. Prendióle la justicia, y mandó el Rey que le trajeran ante él, y preguntóle, porqué había muerto el hombre. El mozo dijo, que el Señor, porqué mato a mi padre; y aunque pedí justicia no me la hicieron. El juéz eclesiástico, que estaba por si, que se la havía hecho, y muy cumplida. El Rey quiso saber la justicia. El juéz respondió que le havía condenado que en un año no dixese misa. El Rey dixo a su alcalde, Soldad éste hombre, y yo le condeno, que en un año no cosa zapatos.

that murder. The King asked him, whether he had demanded justice. He told him the case as it was. The king said to him, Have you courage enough to kill him, since they will not do you justice? Yes, Sir, answered the shoemaker. Do so then, said the king. The next day the arch-deacon walking very near the king in a procession, the injured man stepped up, and stabbed him in two places, so that he dropt down dead. The officers apprehended him, and the king ordered that he should be brought before him, and asked him why he killed my father, and though I demanded justice, it was not done me. The ecclesiastical judge, who was by, answered for himself, that he had done him justice, and very fully. The king would know what justice it was. The judge answered he had condemned him not to say mass in a year. The king then said to the goaler, Damn that man, and I condemn him not to sow any shoes in a year.

D. i. Si mirámos en el modo de proceder, bien la manera de proceder.

se ve que no es conforme *ing*, it is plain it is not according to the law; but if the law will not afford justice, it is but reasonable that other means be found for it. The plaintiff's killing a clergyman, looks like sacrilege as well as revenge, according to the christian notion, and yet it is in some manner justifiable, being done by the command of a king, who is supreme judge, and there being no other way to punish so heinous a crime: for the not saying mass during a year, was not an equivalent penalty to such an offence, and those that are committed by persons dedicated to God, deserve greater punishment than those of the laity.

Cab. I. No pudiéra averlo decidido mejor el mas famoso letrado; y éste caso me tráhe à la memoria lo que hizo el Alcalde Calderón. Fuése á quexár à el un criado de unos Religiósos, de que habían pagár, porque se quedásse con ellos, pareciéndoles bien su servicio. El Alcalde embio à llamar al padre Procurador,

I G. The ablest lawyer could not have decided it better; and this case puts me in mind of what the Alcalde Calderon did. A servant belonging to certain religious men went to complain to him, that having served them the time he was obliged to pay him, that he might stay with them, they liking his service. The Alcalde, or judge, sent for the father procurator, treating him as a favour, supli-

suplicando por mercéd *that he would come to bis viniéssse à su casa, à tratár house, to discourse about a* sobre cierto negocio; y *certain affair;* and charg-aviso à un Alguazil, que *ed an Alguazil, (or officer,) en viniéndo le tomásse la* *that when he came, he mula, en que venía, y la* *should take the mule he rode pusiéssse à buen recáudo. on, and secure her. When Venido el, recibióle el* *he came, the Alcalde re-* Alcalde con mucha cor-*ceived him very courteously,* tesia, y le rogó pagássse a-*and desired him to pay that* quél pobre hombre, que *poor man, who had a mind se quería ir à su tierra. to go away into his own* El procuradór se sonrió, *country. The procurator diciendo, v. m. no es nu-* smiling, said, Sir, you are éstro juéz, *sinó de los se-* not our judge, but only for gláres, si algo debémos à *laymen, if we owe that* ésse hombre, pídalo ánte *man any thing, let him de-* nuéstro juéz, el qual le *mand it before our judge,* hará justicia. Con ésto *who will do him justice.* se despidió, y pidiéndo su *With this he took his leave,* mula, díxo el mózo, que *and enquiring for his mule,* un Alguazil se la havía lle-*the servant said an Alguavado. Bolvío à quexárse zil had carried her away.* al Alcálde, el qual le res-*He went back to complain póndio: Señór, vuéstra to the Alcalde, who answer- reverencia no me podrá ed him. Your reverence negár que la mula es se- cannot deny but that your glár. Cómo tal la guar- mule is of the laity. As dó, hásta que págue el such be kept her, till the procuradór al criádo. procurator paid the ser- vant.*

D. 2. Buena gracia tu- 2 L. *Indeed the Alcalde vo por cierto el Alcálde. was very pleasant. All judges Táles debiéran de ser tó- ought to be like him, for the dos los juéces, para alí- benefit of those who cannot vio de los que no le hal- be otherwise relieved. And lán por ótra manéra. Y since we are upon judgments, pués va de sentencias, vá- take this also. There was ya tambien esta. Trahían a controversy in an univer-* pleyo

pleito en una universidá sity, about precedency before quién iría delante, tween the doctors of law, los doctores juristas, y los and the doctors of physick. de medicina. Preguntó el The judge asked the parties, juéz à las pártes; Quán- When a man is carried to do llévan algúno à justi- execution for being a thief, ciár por ladrón, qual va which goes foremost, the delante, el que ajustician, criminal, or the executio- o el verdugo? Respondi- ner? They answered, the éron, el que ajustician va criminal goes before. If it delante. Si así es, díxo is so, said the judge, let the el juéz, vayan delante los lawyers go foremost as juristas como ladrones, y thieves, and let the physi- sigan los médicos como cians follow them as exe- verdugos.

Cab. 2. Ya que hemos 2 G. Since we are fal- dado con los médicos, len upon physicians, I will daré yó mi badajáda. En let my clapper go. At pope la mesa del papa Alexán- Alexander the vith's table dro vi. se disputaba un it was argued one day, día, si éra provechoso que whether it were advanta- huviéisse en la republica gious to the public to have médicos? La mayor parte physicians. The majority túvo que no; y alegaron affirmed it was not, and en su razón, que Róma e- alledged to make good their stuvo 600 años sin ellos. assertion, that Rome sub- Díxo el papa, que el no fijó 600 years without éra de aquel parecer; por- them. The pope said be qué à faltár ellos, crece- was not of that opinion; be- ría tanto la multitud de cause if there were none of los hombres, que no ca- them, the multitude of men brían en el mundo. would increase so much, that the world could not contain them.

D. 1. No digámos mal 1 L. Let us not speak ill de los médicos, pués en of physicians, since when teniendo necessidá los ha- we shall be in want, we vémos de llamár aunque must send for them, though

nos pese, y ellos à véces ever so much against our
nos hácen mal porqué af- wills, and they sometimes
sí lo queremos, cómo le do us harm because we will
pudo suceder à un hóm- have it so, as might hap-
bre mui rico, que havi- pen to a very rich man,
éndose hallado algo in- who having found himself
dispuesto la noche antes, somewhat indisposed the
embió à llamár un médi- night before, he had a phy-
co ; el qual venido, havi- sician called ; who being
éndole tomado el púlsø, come, and having felt his
preguntó, si comía bién ? pulse, asked, whether he
Respondió, que si. Bol- did eat his meat heartily ?
vió à preguntar el me- He answered he did. The
dico, si dormía bién ? physician asked again, whe-
Respondió, que si. Re- ther he slept well, he answer-
plicó el médico, Pués yó ed he did. The physician
os daré con que se os quí- replied, Then I will give
te todo ésto. you something that shall re-
move all that.

Cab. I. Buena respuésta; 1 G. A good answer ;
y bién empleádo el qui- and it is not done amiss to
tále la salud à quién no deprive one of his health,
está conténto con ella. A- who is not satisfied with it.
unqué no paréscfa tan a- Though it looks not so exact
justádo en todo, por havér in all points, since it con-
cúra y salud, diré lo que cerns curing, and health :
me ha venido à la cabé- I will tell what is come in-
za. Descalabró úno à su to my head. A man broke
mugér, por cierta terri- his wife's bead for her in-
bilidád que en ella havía, tolerable temper, and bad
y curóla con mucha cósta ber cured with much cost
y cuidado, tanto que ella and care, in so much, that
decía éntre si : Yo estói she said to herself: I am
segúra de aquí adelante no safe enough, that for the
óse mi marido hacérme future, my husband will
mal, por no gastár ótro not dare burt me, for fear
tanto cómo ha gastádo. of being at so great an ex-
Communicó éste pensami- pence as he has now been.
ento con sus vezinas y no She told her neighbours
falto

falto quién se lo contásse al *what she thought, and some-*
marido. Calló el hasta *body told her husband. He*
que estuvo sána, quando *took no notice till she was*
llamando al cirujano ante *well, when calling the sur-*
élla, y sabido lo que mon- *geon before her, and under-*
tábala la cura, le dixo. A- *standing what the cure came*
qui tiene v. m. lo que le to, *be said to him, Sir,*
débo, y otro tanto para *bere is what I owe you,*
otra vez, si se le ofreci- *and as much more for ano-*
ére que lo haya menester *ther time, if my wife shall*
mi mugér. *happen to have occasion.*

D. 2. Táles mugéres 2 L. Such women de-
tal trato merécen : que a- serve such usage : for though
unqué no es de hómbres it does not become men of
de porte ponér las máños fashion to strike them, there
en éllas, lénguas hái, y are such tongues and tem-
condiciones que obligan pers as oblige people to do
à lo que no se piensa. Por what they never thought.
esto se dice que el pádre Therefore they say the fa-
da el dote, y Diós la bu- ther gives the portion, and
éna mugér. Pero hái God the good wife. But
hombres tan sufrídos que there are some men so pa-
por todo passan ; tal éra tient, that they bear with
un cornúdo, à quién sen- all things ; such a one was
tenció la justicia, que le a cuckold, who was adjudg-
azotásse su mugér, y que ed in court to be whipped
si no le diéssle récio le di- by his wife, and in case she
esse à ella el verdugo. El did not strike bard, the ex-
buén hómbre volvió la ecutioner was to strike her.
cabéza, y dixo, Dáme The good man looked about,
récio à mi Catarina, no and said, strike me bard
te den à ti. Catherine, that they may
not strike you.

Cab. 2. No éra tan su- 2 G. A son-in-law was
frido un yerno que rogó not so patient, who desired
à su suégro que castigásse bis father-in-law to chastise
su hija, porque si el la ca- bis daughter, because if he
stigába sería muí peór, y did it himself, she would be
el sabía que le hacia tra- worse, and he knew she
cion.

cion. Respondió el sue- *was false to him.* The fa-
gro, reposáos hijo, que *ther-in-law answered,* Be-
por vida de entrámbos, lo *easy, my son, for by both*
mismo hízo su madre há- *our lives, her mother did*
sta que llegó à los sesénta. *the same, till she came to*
Ella lo perderá, que assí *sixty years of age. She*
lo hízo essótra. Por ésto *will leave it off, for so the*
se dice, que se van al ci- *other did. Therefore they*
elo los cornúdos, por- *say cuckolds go to heaven,*
qué tánta paciencia no *because so much patience*
puede quedár sin premio. *cannot go unrewarded.*

D. 1. Algo grosseros, 1 L. Begging your par-
con perdon, son estos cu- don, these tales are some-
éntos, y por mudár, ya what coarse, and to change,
que en lo último se habló since in the last there was
de ir al ciélo, diré lo que mention of going to heaven,
he oido acérca de írse al I will say what I have
infiérno. A un buén beard about going to hell.
predicadór, porque de- Because a good preacher
cía las verdádes, le dában spoke the naked truth, they
un opispádo en las In- offered him a bishopric in
dias, en tiempo del Em- the West-Indies, in the
peradór Carlos quinto. days of the Emperor Charles
Propusoselo el secre- the fifth. The Secretary of
tario de estado, y el state proposed it to him,
respondió désta manera. and he answered thus.
Sépa vuéstra señoría, que Your lordship must under-
el oficio de obispo es stand, that the office of a
may gran trabájo, pára bishop is very troublesome,
quien le ha de servir có- for one that will execute it
mo es obligado; y assí according to his duty; so
conociéndo yo mi flaqué- that I being sensible of my
za de no le podér admi- incapacity to perform it as I
nistrár como débo, créo ought, do think that if I
que puésto en el sería ca- were once settled in it, I
minár al infiérno, pues ir should be in the way to hell,
por las Indias, paréceme and to go by the way of the
gran rodéo. West-Indies, is very far
about.

Cab. I. Grandéza de ánimo christiano fué no admitir un obispado, cosa harto rara en nuéstras dias, quando mas se trabaja por ganar una mitra que por ganar el cielo. Si es generosidad rehusar lo que no se posee, no lo es menos dár con mano liberal y buena gracia lo que ya es propio. Esta virtud estuvo en su punto en el Conde de Uréna. Llegó à el Don Pedro de Guzman, à suplicalle le mandasse dar algun trigo, porque estaba faltó de pan, que aquél año se havia cogido poco. Díxo el Conde à su secretario le hiciéssse un libramiento para un mayordomo suyo, de mil hanegas de trigo, y miéntras el secretario le escribía, quedó hablando con Don Pedro. Venido el secretario con el libramiento, halló que decía, Daréis à Don Pedro mil hanegas de trigo, de que yo le hago mercé. Ragogó el libramiento, y con algúna cólera díxo al secretario, No havéis de decir, finó que el Señor Don Pedro de Guzmán me hace mercé de recibir de mi. Esta es la verdadéra

I. G. It was a christian act of generosity not to accept of a bishoprick, a thing very rare in our days, when more pains is taken to get a mitre, than to gain heaven. If it is generosity to refuse what we have not in possession, it is no less so to give freely, and with a good grace that which is our own already. This virtue was in much perefection in the Count de Ureña. Don Pedro de Guzman came to desire he would order him some corn, because it was scarce with him, that year having yielded very little. The Count commanded his secretary to write an order to one of his stewards for a thousand bushels of wheat, and whilst the secretary was writing, he discoursed with Don Pedro. When the secretary brought the order, he found it run, You shall deliver to Don Pedro a thousand bushels of wheat, which I favour him with. He tore the order, and with some heat said to the secretary, You are not to say so, but which Don Pedro de Guzman does me the favour to accept from me. This is true nobility, to give as becomes the giver, nobleza,

nobléza, dar conforme à *and not to the receiver, and*
quién da y no à quién re- *to save him that asks the*
cíbe, y quitar la verguén- *shame by the way of giving.*
za à quién píde con el
modo de dar.

D. 2. Mas gustóla ma- 2 L. *The subject we have*
téria es la que tenemos én- *in hand is more agreeable*
tre manos que la passada, than the last, in as much as
quanto es mas de estimar virtue is more to be valued
la virtud que el vicio. Pá- *than vice. To go on with*
ra proseguir con ella, al it, an old gentlewoman
Dúque de Alva suplicó ú- *prayed the Duke de Alva*
na dueña le ayudásse pára to give her something to-
casár una hija. El Duque wards marrying off a daugh-
le mandó dar veinte du- *ter. The Duke ordered her*
cados. El camarero à twenty ducats. The gen-
quien lo mandó dióle do- *tleman be ordered to do it,*
cientos. Al tomárle des- *gave her two hundred.*
pues la cuénta halló pu- *When he came afterwards*
éstos docientos ducados to take his accounts, he
en lugar de veinte. Díxole found two hundred ducats
al camarero cómo pusistes set down instead of twenty.
aquí docientos ducados, He said to the gentleman,
no haviéndo de ser finó How came you to set down
veinte. El camarero res- *two hundred ducats, where-*
pondió. Señor, yó oí as there should be but twen-
dociéntos ducados. Re- *ty. The gentleman answer-*
plicó el Dúque. Bendito ed, my lord, I understood
séa Diós, que te dió me- *two hundred. The Duke*
jóres oídos, que à mi lén- *replied, God be praised, for*
gua. Y pasió en cuénta giving you better ears, than
los docientos ducados. *me a tongue. And so he*
passed the two hundred du-
cats in the account.

Cab. 2. Bién enmendó 2 G. *He made good a-*
la falta en el dar con la li- *mends for the error in giv-*
beralidad de consentir en ing by his liberality in con-
lo dádo. El Cónde de senting to what bad been
Feria tenía tanta grandé- given. The Count de Feria

za de animó, que dáva à *bad such a generous soul,*
tódos quántos le pedían. *that he gave to all that*
Tenía costúmbre de dezir *asked him. He was wont*
à su mayordómo, Dad à *to say to his steward, Give*
fuláno tréinta, o quarénta *such a one thirty, or forty*
escúdos; dad à citáno ci- *crowns, give such another*
en escúdos, o ciento y *an hundred, or an hundred*
cinquenta, de manéra que *and fifty, so that be never*
núnca decía cosa señaláda. *said any thing certain. The*
El mayordómo le díxo, *steward said to him, when*
de que v^a. s^a. mánda dar *your lordship orders some-*
álgoo, díce tréinte o qua- *thing to be given, you say*
rénta, y así de otros nú- *thirty or forty, and so of*
meros, con que quedó *other numbers, so that I*
confúso, sin sabér à que *am at an uncertainty, not*
me aténga. Respondió *knowing which to lay bold*
el Conde; Por tu vída *of. The Count answered,*
te atén siémpre à lo mas, *I desire you will always*
no múdes mi condición. *bold to the most, do not*
 stint my nature.

D. i. Céssen un ráto
las pláticas, y sirvánse v^s.
m^r. de tomár algún re-
fréscio, o colación. Aquí
hái chocoláte, téa, dúl-
ces, y un trágó de víno,
pára que escója cáda qual
lo que mas le agradáre;
que ésto de hablar, sino
es trabájo, gásta el alien-
to, y es menestér dar al-
gún alívio al estómago,
que son muchas las horas
entre la comida y la céna.

i L. Let us for a while
cease this discourse, and be
pleased to take some refresh-
ment, or collation. Here is
chocolate, tea, sweet-meats,
and a glass of wine, that
every one may choose what
he likes best; for talking,
though it be no labour,
spends the breath, and it
is convenient to give some
support to the stomach, for
there are many hours be-
tween dinner and supper.



Coloquios Espanóles è Ingleses.

Spaniſh and Englifh Colloquies.

Colóquio sexto. COLLOQUY VI.

Entre dos Capitánes, y dos Cortefáños. Between two Captains,
and two Courtiers.

1 Cap. **B**uen encuen- **1 Cap.** **W**ELL met,
tro, Señores, Gentlemen,
dos à dos; conque está- two and two; so that we
mos iguales, no nos lle- are equal, we shall have no
varémos ventaja en la superiority in conversation;
Conversación; y si huvi- and if we should happen to
éremos de reñir, à pares fall out, we are ready pair-
venímos. ed.

1 Cor. A essa cuenta, **1 Cour.** After that rate,
mas vale no estar tan igua- it is better not to be so equal,
les, que en términos de than just fitted to make
armar pendencias. quarrels.

2 Cap. Bién dice v. **2 Cap.** You are in the
m^d. que acá entre Amí- right, Sir, for bere among
gos sólo seha de tratár de friends we must only talk of
Paz; la Guerra há de ser peace; War must be with
con los enemigos del the King's enemies.
Rey.

2 Cor. Y ésta para v. **2 Cour.** And that is for
m^{ds}. que han tomado por you, Gentlemen, who have
esse camíño; que nosó- taken to that way; for we
tros mui bién nos hallá- are very well satisfied with
mos con la quietud de la the repose of the Court.
Corte.

1 Cap. A nosótrós nos **1 Cap.** This has fallen
há cabido esto en parte, to our lot, and the other to
y à

y à v. mds. lo otro ; Ca- yours ; every one suits him-
da úno se acomóda con self to that he was born
aquéllo para que nació. for.

1 Cor. Fuérza es que 1 Cour. There must of
háya de todo en éste mun- necessity be of all sorts in
do : 'Unos hizo Diós pá- this world : God made some
ra la Milicia, otros pára for warfare, others for the
Palacio ; únos pára Reli- Court ; some for religious
giosos, otros para tratan- men, others for trades ;
tes ; unos para oficios some for mechanic employ-
mecánicos, otros pára ments, others for Peasants ;
labradóres ; únos pára some to command, and o-
emandár, y otros para ser- thers to serve.
virs.

2 Cap. La misma va-
riedad que se hálla en los
diferentes estados, vémos
en las Capacidades y dis-
posiciones de los hombres.
Personas hái que son há-
biles para todos los pue-
stos, pero son pocas ; y
estas si son afortunadas
van subiendo de uno en
otro hasta alcanzár mui
grandes honras. Al con-
trario hái otros, que no
teniendo habilidad pára
cosa algúna, alcanzan lo
que quieren ; y general-
mente hablando, los mas
beneméritos son desgra-
ciados, digo de los bué-
nos soldados.

2 Cor. Lo mismo su-
cede en la Corte, en don-
de solo aquellos que em-
pléan todo su talento en
agasajar las Dámas y agra-

2 Cap. The same va-
riety that is found in sev-
eral states, we see in the ca-
pacities and dispositions of
men. There are some per-
sons qualified for all posts,
but they are few ; and
those if they are fortunate,
rise from one to the other,
till they attain to great ho-
nours. On the contrary
there are others, that being
very undeserving obtain
what they please ; and ge-
nerally speaking, the most
deserving are unlucky, I
speak of the good soldiers.

2 Cour. The same bap-
pens at Court, where only
those that spend all their
talent in making much of
the Ladies and pleasing
dárlas,

dárlas, son losque mé- them, are the persons that
dran.

1 Cap. Eso es verdád ; 1 Cap. That is true ;
y quantos hémos visto al- and how many we have
canzár puestos de mucha seen advanced to posts of
reputación por sóla su much reputation, only for
desverguenza, ò por su their impudence, or their
dinero, quedandole atrás money, the deserving per-
las persónas de mérito. sons being laid aside.

1 Cor. Quien es enco- 1 Cour. He that is baß-
gido guárdese de entrár ful must take heed of going
en córtes ; ningúnos mé- to courts ; none thrive like
dran como los descarádos, foreheads of brass, flatte-
aduladóres, y losque tié- rers, and those that have
nen despéjo.

2 Cap. Los soldados 2 Cap. We the soldiers
tenémos algo de esse ví- have some share in that
cio, porque de ótra fuer- vice, because otherwise we
te no fuéramos de prové- should not be fit for war :
cho pára la guérра : tres we have three motives to
motivos tenémos para ex- expose ourselves to so many
ponernos à tantos trabájos hardships and dangers ;
y pelígrlos ; que son, por which are, for the Faith,
la Fé, por la honra, y for honour, and for pro-
por el provécho. Los fit. We the soldiers,
soldados (Diós nos per- (God forgive us) though we
dóne) aunque hagámos make war against the In-
guerra à Infiéles, mas fidels, human advantages
nos muéven las médras have more influence over us
humáñas, que las esperan- than the bopes of heaven.
zas del Ciélo. La hon- Honour is a sovereign mo-
ra es un motivo soberáno ; tive ; and though they say,
y aunque dícen, que bon- that the same bag cannot
ra y provécho no cáben en hold honour and profit,
un sáco, yo digo que bon- I say that honour with-
ra sin provécho es sombra out profit is a shadow
sin substáncia. Quién ga- without substance. Who
nó mas honra que el fa- is there that gained more
móso Capitán Belisário ? honour than the famous
Y qui-

Y quien mas desgraciá- Commander Belisarius?
do? And who more unfortunate?

2 Cor. Grande fué la 2 Cour. Great was the
Caída de Belisario, y no fall of Belisarius, nor was
fué menor la de António tbat of António Pérez
Pérez; aquél fué Gene- less; the former was the
rál del Imperador Justini- Emperor Justinian's Ge-
áno, y éste Ministro fa- neral, and this favorite
vorecido del Rey Don Minister to King Philip
Pbelípe el segundo; el ú- the second; the one a great
no Gran soldado, el otro soldier, the other no less a
no menor Cortesano. Fal- Courtier. Belisarius want-
tóle la ventúra à Belisá- ed the fortune to have it in
rio de podér, y tener à his power, and have a
donde huír; túvola Antó- place to fly to; António
nio Pérez, en escapárse y Pérez had it in making his
hallár un Rey de Frán- escape, and finding a King
cia que le sustentásse con- of France to maintain him
forme à su Calidád. according to his quality.

1 Cap. Ahí se vé lo 1 Cap. That shows how
poco que hái que fiár en little trust is to be reposed in
las grandezas de ésta ví- the grandours of this life.
da. Dos de los mayores Two of the greatest men
hombres que húvo en el there have been in the
mundo, el uno sacados world, one of them his eyes
los ójos, el otro puesto put out, the other put up-
en un tormento; el uno on a rack; the one beg-
mendigando por las cál- ging in the streets, the other
les, el otro huyéndo por flying to save his life; and
librár la vida, y ésto not for any offence of either
sin culpa de ninguno de of them.
ellos.

1 Cor. Que un Rey 1 Cour. For a King to
castigue à sus Vasállos punish his subjects for being
por desleáles, es justicia; disloyal, it is justice; to per-
péro que persiga sin pie- secute his subject without
dad un Vasallo, solo por mercy, only for having
haverle

haverle obedecido, es in- obeyed him, is such an hor-
umanidad tan horrible, rid inhumanity, that the
que apénas se hallará se- like of it can scarce be found
mejante entre las mas bár- among the most barbarous
baras naciones. Mucho nations. Some authors
han escrito algunos Au- have writ much in com-
tóres en alabanza de a- mendation of that King, but
quel Rey, pero quien whosoever shall read his life
leyére su vida con aten- with attention, will find
ción, hallará que el fué la that he was the ruin of
ruina de España.

2 Cap. Lo que à nosó- 2 Cap. What concerns
tros nos importa, es pro- us, is to endeavour to rise,
curar subir, sin ponernos without standing to consider
à pensar si podrémos caér; whether we may fall; the
la dificultad está en lo pri- difficulty consists in the first
méro, y venga despues part, and let what will af-
lo que viniere. terwards follow.

2 Cor. Habilidad y bu- 2 Cour. There must be
en ánimo es menester pa- capacity and a good heart
ra todo, y lo cierto es, for every thing, and it is
que el que no tiene su pun- certain, that he who has
to de Ambición, mas es not some share in ambition,
para un convento que pá- is fitter for a monastery than
ra el mundo. for the world.

1 Cap. Quién le há 1 Cap. Who has told
dicho, que en los Con- you, that there is no ambi-
ventos no se halla ambi- tion in the convents? Do
ción? No vémos todos not we see every day, there
los días que son demasiá- are too many that trouble
dos los que revuelven el all the world to rise to be
mundo para ser Superi- Superiors, and even Bi-
óres, y ahún Obisplos? shops?

1 Cor. Es cierto, y 1 Cour. It is certain,
harto nos dan en que en- and we have enough to do
tendér.

2 Cap. Dexemoslos al- 2 Cap. Let us leave
lá, y solo digo, que nu- them there, I only say,
nústra

estra veréda es mui estré- *that our path is very nar-*
cha, y cáda pásso se há *row, and every step is to*
de ír ganando à fuégo y *be gained with fire and*
à sangre; y si despues *blood; and if after all we*
de esto se alcanza algo, *attain something, an unbap-*
lléga una desdicháda bála *py ball comes and over-*
y dá con tódo en tier- *tthrows it all.*
ra.

2 Cor. Aunque noso- 2 Cour. *Alibough we*
tros no estamos tan su- *are not so subject to so ma-*
jertos à tantos trabájos y ny *hardships and fatigues,*
fatigas, neceſſidádes, frí- *wants, colds, beats, bad*
os, calóres, malos días y *days, and worse nights, to*
peores nóches, à tantas *so many wounds, and to*
heridas, y à tantos ries- *so many dangers, fatal effects*
gos, (efectos fatáles de la *of war; notwithstanding,*
guerra): fin embargo, *I affure you, that we have*
les aseguro, que no nos *war and dangers enough in*
faltan guerra y peligros *court, alibough we do*
en la corte aunque la ha- *make it after another man-*
cémos de otra suerte; no *ner; we do not make our*
ensangrentámos las espá- *swords bloody, we spend no*
das, no gastámos pólvlo- *powder; bullets do not kill;*
ra; no matan las bálas; *all victories are gained by*
todas las vitórias se gá- *contrivance and stratagems;*
nan por ardides y estra- *wit, the pen, and tongue*
tagémas; el ingénio, la *work, and not force. It*
pluma, y lengua obran, *is true, that there reign*
no la fuerza. Es verdád, *envy, hypocrisy, flattery,*
que allí reinan la invídia, *deceits, falsities, frauds,*
hypocresía, lisonjas, en- *and other sorts of wicked-*
gáños, falsoſades, fráu- *ness, that I am ashamed*
des, y ótros maldádes, *to make them public, I be-*
que, à no avergonzarme, *ing one of them; but from*
por ser uno de ellos, las *what is said you may in-*
dixéra; pero de lo dicho *ser what passes there.*
v. m^{do}. puéden inferir lo-
que allí se passa.

1 y 2 Caps. Si essa es 1 and 2 Caps. If that be
 la vida de la Corte, vi- the Court life, we rather
 vám̄os y murámos nosó- chuse to live and die in the
 tros en la campáña; don- field; where we fight
 de nos reñimos con nu- with our enemies, and
 éstros enemigos, y tratá- deal justly with our
 mos verdád con los a- friends.

F I N I S.

